

EXPOSING THE CURSE

Photo of "Lightning Tree" used by kind permission of Ian Cameron of Transient Light, Scotland, UK.

The photo is a depiction of the tree of human reasoning whose fruit was eaten by the first man and woman that started humanity on its course of destruction culminating in the events that we are about to see come to pass in our generation.

Just as humanity is torn between good and evil, so the tree is split down the middle, worn out and dying, indicative of the world we have all helped create. The setting is winter, yet the promise of spring is just around the corner . . .

EXPOSING THE CURSE

*What Science, Religion and Politics
have not been able to tell you about*

*Life, Health, Sex and Death
and how this affects the debate on*

ABORTION, HOMOSEXUALITY
and
END-OF-LIFE ISSUES

JAMES GLOVER

PREMIER PUBLICATIONS
Helensburgh

Copyright © James Glover 2009

The right of James Glover to be identified as the author of this work has been asserted by him in accordance with the Copyright Designs and Patents Act, 1988.

Unless otherwise indicated, biblical quotations are from the New King James Version © 1979, 1980, 1982 by Thomas Nelson Inc., Publishers.

This book is sold subject to the condition that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, resold, hired out, or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser.

UK ISBN: 978 0 9551605 1 6

First published in the United Kingdom 2009 by Premier Publications, P.O. Box 26623, Helensburgh G84 4AH, UK.

Dedication

To those for whom the pursuit of truth is more than an ideal but a passionate embrace of the virtues of wisdom, logic, justice and investigation.

These include historians, journalists, scientists, judges, teachers and clergy . . . specifically those who do not compromise their profession for dishonest gain or the accolades of man.

Table of Contents

Introduction: Who Are We?	11
<i>More than the sum of our parts</i>	13
<i>A theory of everything</i>	15
<i>A short history</i>	16
<i>A divided religion</i>	19
<i>Trying to get our laws right</i>	20
<i>Beliefs of the west</i>	21
1. Human Existence or Human Happiness?	24
<i>What you never knew about sleep</i>	25
<i>Life or death, we decide!</i>	26
<i>The devil is not a myth</i>	27
<i>Life or death has always been a choice</i>	29
<i>Can we heal our spirit?</i>	31
<i>Medical limits</i>	31
<i>The power of wise instruction</i>	33
<i>The serpent in the church</i>	35
2. When Does an Egg Become a Chicken?	36
<i>The breath of life</i>	37
<i>More than just apron strings</i>	38
<i>When Mom starts twitching</i>	39
<i>Silent scream or bad dream!</i>	41

<i>Is abortion murder?</i>	42
<i>The human spirit</i>	43
<i>Pro-life priorities</i>	44
<i>True religion is this . . .</i>	44
<i>Pro-life, con-demned</i>	46
<i>Better priorities</i>	46
3. Why Men Keep on Having Abortions!	49
<i>Aborting the woman</i>	50
<i>Some are more equal than others</i>	51
<i>Men rule!</i>	53
<i>No, God rules!!</i>	55
<i>Love, not worship!</i>	56
<i>It's not who he is, it's what he does!</i>	56
<i>Some men and women marry five times a month!</i>	57
<i>The men behind abortions</i>	58
<i>Compassionate laws</i>	60
4. The Horror of Being Eve	62
<i>Hating women</i>	62
<i>Sexual violence</i>	63
<i>Example, not speeches</i>	65
<i>The whipping girl</i>	67
<i>My sister, my friend</i>	68
<i>The role of women</i>	68
<i>Genital mutilation</i>	70
<i>Divine contraception</i>	73
<i>Becoming the ideal man</i>	79
5. Homophobia and the Church	82
<i>Gay law</i>	84
<i>Sin discrimination</i>	85
<i>An outing in public</i>	87
<i>Over compensating?</i>	88
<i>Social inclusion</i>	89
<i>Spanking the church</i>	91

TABLE OF CONTENTS

9

	<i>Why Harry likes Barry</i>	93
	<i>Sheila likes Sophie, so?</i>	97
	<i>One way or another</i>	99
	<i>Going straight</i>	101
	<i>Questions and answers</i>	102
6.	End-of-life Issues: Suicide	107
	<i>Facts of death</i>	108
	<i>So who commits suicide and why?</i>	111
	<i>There's no escape</i>	112
	<i>The ultimate pain relief</i>	114
	<i>Using suicide to escape justice</i>	115
	<i>What about suicide cults?</i>	116
	<i>Depression and mental distress</i>	117
	<i>Why teach something that isn't true?</i>	118
7.	End-of-life Issues: Euthanasia	121
	<i>Terminal anxiety</i>	122
	<i>The murder of free will</i>	123
	<i>Ethical opinions</i>	125
	<i>Enabling choices</i>	127
	<i>A reality check</i>	129
	<i>Don't tell me how I feel!</i>	130
8.	End-of-life Issues: Execution	132
	<i>No appeasement of evil</i>	133
	<i>Cruel and unusual</i>	134
	<i>Appeals or repentance</i>	135
	<i>Unsafe convictions</i>	136
9.	End-of-life Issues: Euthanasia of Children	137
	<i>The God option</i>	138
	<i>The secular option</i>	139
	<i>Conclusion</i>	141

10. Why the Angels are Weeping	143
<i>Judgement day</i>	144
<i>Get historical, not hysterical!</i>	144
<i>First, the church</i>	149
<i>Second: the nations of promise</i>	151
<i>Is global warming man-made?</i>	153
<i>Everybody else</i>	157
 Scriptures and Commentary	 159
 Author Profile	 271

INTRODUCTION

Who Are We?

Why do we believe what we believe? Where's the evidence for our belief system, not just for religion but for anything? How can we prove that our parents are who they say they are? Because we share the same name? Because that's what they told us? Because they took a video of the birth? But that baby could be anyone.

If there's any doubt we could always take a paternity test. One mouth swab and a genetic print-out later, we'll have conclusive evidence one way or another. Trouble is, not everything in this life can be so definitively proven.

How many of us are even inclined to question our own belief system? We hate it when others challenge what we believe. We immediately seek to defend it, why? Because we think that person is calling us a liar, because he thinks he's better than me or is it because we have created a wall of security on that foundation of belief and if that's taken away we'll be left exposed, unsure and completely insecure. Everything becomes loose and wobbly.

But where is the evidence for what we believe? A wife believes her husband loves her until he runs off with his secretary. A man believes his job is secure until the stock market takes a tumble and he's laid off.

We believe our Country is safe until its attacked, we believe our future is secure until our pension fund gets raided. We keep fit, eat well and do everything right, do everything that we're told in the belief we'll enjoy good health; until we get sick. And what about death? In the time that its taken us to read this far, over 10,000 people have met an untimely end in this world and none of them were prepared for it.

For many people religion is the answer. A non-evidenced based belief in a God that will solve all our problems. That's great until trouble comes and our prayers just bounce off the ceiling. And how long does belief in religion last when you see its adherents cause more bloodshed and cruelty than any atheist could ever manage, or its Priests are caught having sex with children or the mantras and meditation of Far East religions give way to hypocrisy when the poor and the helpless are ignored?

Western culture and modern civilisation have made extraordinary progress because of Science. That, along with a healthy respect for human rights safe-guarding the dignity and freedom of the individual. Trouble is, little by little, it's being eroded and people's beliefs along with it. Medicine is not the cure-all we all thought it was going to be, democracy is impotent when practised by selfish people, greater liberty is worthless if anarchy prevails.

So if social and political systems cannot be trusted as the bedrock of our security then what can be?

The answer, strangely enough, is you! Don't get me wrong, this is not some self-help, me-centred, blow sunshine up your backside kind of book, it is an evidence-based analysis of who we really are, how our beliefs should be structured and what the future actually holds for us as individuals and for the World as a whole.

MORE THAN THE SUM OF OUR PARTS

So who are you? Stand completely naked in front of a full-length mirror and you will see your physical body staring back at you. Is that all of you? Is that an accurate reflection of who you really are? Physically, the answer is yes, but you and I are a lot more than just the sum of our physical parts. The fact is, that mirror is only showing one third of your whole being. It's the other two-thirds we're going to be taking a closer look at.

When Freud did his ground-breaking work on our psychological makeup, he was able to divide our existence levels into the Conscious, the sub-conscious and the id. The conscious state is someone who is fully alert, able to comprehend his physical surroundings and in tune with his five physical senses of touch, taste, smell, hearing and seeing, which serves our ability to reason and make decisions. The sub-conscious deals with our dreams, feelings, imaginations and aspirations. The id primarily deals with our desires, what drives and motivates us to do the things we do.

One affects the other, intermingled, inseparable. **You can't divorce the body from the mind, or the mind from the heart.** If the physical body gets injured, the injury registers with our mind affecting our decision-making process, with our heart affecting our feelings and driving our response. It works the other way round too. If we become depressed and sad, this drives our thought processes which in turn affects the health of our physical bodies.

We are amazingly complex creatures but what is even more astonishing is how utterly unique we are as individuals. Did you know that never in the history of man or ever in the future of man has there ever been, or ever will be, someone who is exactly like you. Genetic scientists have barely scratched the surface of this amazing fact. Your genetic fingerprint is unique, that is, the analysis of your DNA which

is a study of your physical make-up. But that still only deals with one third of who you are. **Your mind and your heart are unique as well.**

What do we mean when we speak about the heart? The human body has a pump that circulates blood through our arteries bringing life to the very extremities of our body. We call this pump our heart, our physical heart. **But what do we mean when we speak about the heart of our being?** There is no X-ray machine capable of looking at that. No surgeon can get to that part of us. In fact, the human heart is undetectable by any human machine or physical instrument because it's not physical. In the Christian religion, **the human heart is described as the human spirit**, a unique creation within itself. This living essence provides each human being with inherent talent, desire, motivational force or drive. Its existence is questioned by the scientific community and is often confused by Psychiatry as being a part of the mind. This idea couldn't be more inaccurate. The processes of the mind are driven by the heart, not vice versa. To summarise, a human being is first and foremost a spirit being that is locked inside a physical apparatus that we call our bodies which is the carriage and physical extension of our brain (our mind function).

So how do we differ from animals? They don't have a human spirit, their driving force and habitual methods comes from instinct. Other than that, physically, we are very similar.

Whenever you hear the word soul, you should be aware that this describes your mind and the function of your brain and is not interchangeable with your human spirit.

So why is it necessary for us to know all this? **Because it's difficult to comprehend what's going on in this life without this knowledge.** Our decisions about all manner of things end up being based on a false premise. Our belief systems become chaotic or they are manifested as

inflexible dogma which result in every conceivable form of misery known to man. Just look at Communism.

Careful readers will now note that I have made a statement about something, for which there is no direct, scientifically-proved evidence. Well, actually there is, but the evidence is subjective which means you could draw conclusions contrary to the one I'm offering. So who is right? **Is my opinion more valid than someone else?** Actually it isn't. If all I've done is state an opinion then in the grand scheme of things my opinion, no matter how well informed, is irrelevant. The world is filled with opinions. Some get more attention than others because they have a PHD or they're a celebrity. If you're popular and people like you, a form of worship takes place where, just by virtue of this popularity, your opinion is sought after and valued. Thus, a new belief system is born until your opinion is disproved by bitter experience or you fall out of favour, become unpopular and therefore the willingness to believe you is gone too.

That can happen to anyone. Politicians, Kings, businessmen, celebrities, scientists, teachers, Generals, religious leaders. Literally no one on Earth can be trusted with their opinion on what life is ultimately about because we're all mortal, easily corrupted and destroyed and we can all be manipulated because no one on Earth knows everything and partial knowledge can be a dangerous thing.

A THEORY OF EVERYTHING

There is, however, a source of knowledge that claims to know everything about the human condition. That claims to know where we came from and how we got ourselves into the situation we're currently facing. That claims to know everything about what we call natural laws, in other words: what consequences we can expect from certain actions we may take in this life. That claims to be able to predict the future precisely. That reveals who we really are, that we

did not evolve from apes but that **our existence is no accident**, that we are living now in this moment of time for a very specific reason. That claims to know precisely what happens to us at the moment of death and what lies beyond. The writer, or inspirer of this knowledge, makes the claim that He knows us better than we could possibly know ourselves because He is the one who created us. Collectively, around the world, we know this being, this creator as God. And the source of this knowledge is His Word, or The Holy Bible, the most contentious, the most highly disputed, the most misunderstood, the most misrepresented book of all time.

A SHORT HISTORY

Five hundred years ago, the ability to read what was in the Bible was restricted to the Clergy, men of learning who could read Greek, Hebrew and Latin. They interpreted parts of the Bible and taught these lessons to the majority of people who didn't have their gift. The trouble is, these same men went beyond the literal translation and attempted to tell the people what they thought these individual verses actually meant. **In other words, they expressed their opinion as to what they thought God was trying to teach us.** Consequently, we have a situation where a number of doctrines (teachings presented as incontrovertible fact) do not actually represent what God was seeking to teach the readers of His Word. Many of these doctrines went unchallenged until the Bible was made available to the majority of people through the mass publication made possible by the Printing press and the authoritative work of highly skilled translators who were authorised by King James the first, of England and Scotland.

Many secularists contend that the authenticity of any translation cannot be trusted because the Bible has so many different writers, who lived at different times, spoke different languages and has no verifiable chain of custody. They also point out that many different translations have been produced and that some of the writings of the

early church have been left in and some left out, **so how are we supposed to trust that the King James Bible is the most authoritative and the most accurate?** This is a perfectly valid question and there are only two possible answers. The first has to be the widespread acceptance of this version by virtually everyone who has looked into its origins, also, the vast majority of translations that have followed on from the original King James have used this version on which to base their work. Second, if you accept that God does in fact exist and that He desires to communicate with mankind and that He is all-powerful, all-knowing and is omni-present (meaning He is everywhere, all the time), then you have to accept that He is able to ensure that His Word will be put together and published in a perfect form, free of any error or mistake.

In other words, an act of faith? Well, yes, but not entirely because the proof of the Bibles' accuracy does not rely on physical evidence. **You can actually test whether the Bible is true or not** by comparing prophecy with past events, by comparing scriptural assertions with what science has uncovered and the final test is simple obedience. If a scripture says to do something which will result in a positive outcome, then simply do it and see what happens.

So we have the Word of God written in our language but, for most of us, **it might as well be written in a language from Mars.** It appears to be full of contradictions, confusing forms of poetry, strange visual imagery and obscure cultural references. It would be reasonable to argue that if God wanted to make His teachings clear to us, He should have written His Word so that it could be read like a regular text book or novel. So why didn't He?

There are several reasons but they can all be condensed down to one word: relationship! You see, I enjoy the books written by John Grisham but **I don't have to personally know the author in order to understand his novels.** But the Bible is the written Word of God. It contains

knowledge about things that cannot be understood or proved within the physical realm. Going back to what we saw earlier, **a human being is one third body, one third soul and one third spirit**, but our human spirit is in a state of rebellion against God. This story is told in full in the first book of the Bible called Genesis. The very first man: Adam and the very first woman: Eve disobeyed God and as a consequence they, and all their descendants (which is every human being on Earth) has been spiritually separated from God and pretty much left to our own devices. But God had a plan to correct this situation, a very long term plan. The Bible reveals that plan and He has used certain people down through the ages to help that plan along and His ultimate goal is to restore the relationship between God and Mankind.

Whenever you hear that word the "Gospel", it refers to an old english word meaning good news. The Good News is that it is now possible for anyone who believes the Word of God concerning Mans' ultimate Saviour Jesus Christ has given His life for them, can have that relationship restored with all the benefits and favour that go along with it. But it should be noted that this relationship is personal and, for the Christian (the name given to identify believers) no other relationship on Earth should be more important to him or her. What should be one of the greatest benefits of becoming a Christian is enjoying communication with God. Christians pray, which should be done in private with no one else around. This should be completely frank communication between the Christian and God, nothing should be hidden or withheld. There should also be an attitude of gratefulness and deep reverence and respect. The communication is not one way. The Christian receives communication from God by reading the Bible and he reads it as if God is talking to him personally.

Another crucial point. The Christian is given something that, at this stage, most people don't have and that is the Holy Spirit which connects with his human spirit giving him understanding, wisdom,

special gifts and the power to overcome his weaknesses. The Holy Spirit is the Christians' conduit to God.

The majority of people in this world have no real interest in the Bible and are not too keen on the gospel when they hear it, in fact some are very hostile and Christians have been martyred just for being Christian. Most people, rather than become Christians themselves will instead become what the Bible calls witnesses. They'll see Christians in action helping the poor, healing the sick, praying for ordinary people when they're having a tough time and generally being a blessing and a worthwhile help to their communities. This witness will enable regular people to be more receptive to any instruction or advice offered by their Christian neighbours who should be ready to provide counsel, comfort or assistance whenever it's asked for.

A DIVIDED RELIGION

But what about the Christian religion, the mega churches, the huge number of denominations? How does that square with a small community of believers? Strictly speaking, the Christian organisations that presently exist are there to perform a function that would be beyond the scope of small local groups. They can mobilise an army of volunteers and specialist skills to go and assist in a war-torn or disaster-stricken area. They can help to re-build ravaged communities and assist willing Government authorities who are happy to accept their help. A Christian may be part of one of these mega churches but his/her responsibility is still the building up of their personal relationship with God.

As for the large number of denominations this mainly grew out of a conflict of priorities. Most denominations began as a split from their original group where one, or several people had a vision (mission purpose) that conflicted with the priorities of their current

denomination. To keep the peace, this new group would leave and follow their new vision. **At no point were they absolved from their first priority which is their personal relationship with God.** During the course of this evolution of the Church, some Christians became hostile toward one another and harboured grievances and rejected any form of cross-denominational co-operation. In some cases, the grievance was written into the constitution of that denomination, forbidding their members to have any contact with the breakaway group or vice versa.

Well, Christian or not, we all come from families that have disagreements, rows and arguments. The only solution to those problems is forgiveness and reconciliation. **We can learn to live with one another's differences when there is mutual respect and a desire for peace and co-operation** that are not subject to any pre-conditions. Every Christian denomination has to learn that and accept that, as does every Christian who claims that the Bible is the standard by which he/she lives. And therein lies the key. **Who sets the standards for life?** Whose opinion do we believe or follow? If there is a consensus among a group of national leaders as to what should constitute a law or regulation regarding a form of human behaviour, then, that law is adopted by that nation and the people are informed of the penalty for disobedience. Ideally there should also be an incentive for obeying that law.

TRYING TO GET OUR LAWS RIGHT

But what if that law has unforeseen consequences? The leaders get together again, they try and figure out what went wrong and then they amend the regulation. So the law becomes an evolving instrument, changing almost at the whim of the existing authority. If that isn't confusing enough, you can visit another Country that permits the very behaviour that your own Country forbids, or they will imprison or execute you for doing something that in your own

Country is perfectly legal. **So who on Earth decides what is really right or wrong?** Opinions vary from: nation to nation, state to state, city to city, family to family and finally, person to person.

Laws made by man, no matter how well intentioned, are subject to error and, if not equally applied across the social structure, are deemed unjust. Around the Earth, we have tried every form of Government we could possibly come up with and, to one extent or another, they have failed. Democracy makes leaders accountable to the people and the people elect the leaders, **but the people cannot read the hearts of their leaders so they don't really know what they're getting** and even if they did, does a majority opinion automatically constitute wisdom? If history is anything to go by, the answer is a resounding No!

We've tried Theocracies, Autocracies, Kings, Emperors, Dictators, Communism, Democracy and finally a One World Government (still in the process of being established). That will fail as well because mankind, by himself, does not know the way to real and lasting peace. We need laws that are perfect in their construct, completely just and applied universally across all social strata, peoples and nations. If we take the sum total of all the gifts, talents, abilities and energy of the whole of mankind and applied them to come up with this perfect law, we would fail miserably because our human nature, our rebellious spirit, our selfish, greedy, egotistical, sinful, self righteous traits would always betray us.

BELIEFS OF THE WEST

Which brings us back to the Bible and the perfect laws of God. But haven't we tried some of these? Haven't some of these laws been incorporated into our own justice system? Of course they have and, where evenly applied, they have worked well. Where they have been misapplied, they don't work and injustice is the result. **So the laws of God do not fail but people do** which brings us back to God's plan for

restoring His relationship with mankind. This means, on a personal level, admitting we have got it wrong, that we've broken His perfect laws left, right and centre which means we are subject to the penalty of those laws which is trouble, of one sort or another, on a massive scale which will affect us personally and our loved ones and even the wider community. Under those circumstances, **we need divine forgiveness** but the penalties of those laws must be paid, otherwise those laws become unjust. So God, our spiritual Father, sent God the Son: Jesus Christ to pay that penalty for everyone who believes and commits him/her self to live by the Word of God.

Every person who does that, every Christian, must be taught from the Bible about how he/she must conduct themselves in every conceivable aspect of life. **No more listening to mans' opinions**, no more being led astray by opinion-based doctrine, no more taking the popular route just because everybody else is doing it, **no more listening to surveys, expert opinions and conjecture**. The Word of God must be the sole basis of our life decisions. We can operate within the parameters allowed by God but at no point can we deviate from His core principles.

Ah! Too late, we already have. Very shortly we will be looking at real-life anecdotal evidence of bad doctrine that deals with the social issues of Abortion, Homosexuality and End of Life issues. In addition and even more importantly, we will see where these doctrines came from, what their history is and how they actually contradict the Bible. **How certain scriptures have been used to prop up an opinion-based doctrine** and what the consequences have been to the wider Christian church and the public perception of Christians in general.

One thing should be clarified from the very beginning; **I am not convinced that these doctrines were formed from a malicious motive**. I think this has more to do with the mistaken perception of the Bible as being just another work book that you can study just like any other.

From the moment you open the Bible you need to be convinced of three things: That God inspired every word. That the Bible is totally complete lacking nothing, That the Bible dictates the manner in which it should be read and how it should be interpreted. For a Bible teacher to be effective, these three elements must be present before he reads a single word.

So what is the manner in which it should be read? Humbly, sitting at the feet of God, eager to learn, reverential exhibiting the deepest respect, when He says: "This is so!", then there is no argument. Let every person on the planet be wrong if they contend with any part of the Word of God. Second: interpretation. **We cannot add a single word of explanation to the Bible because the Bible interprets itself.** Line upon line, precept upon precept, here a little, there a little. The Word of God is not subject to any private interpretation or opinion. It is complete. Nothing is to be added, nothing is to be taken away. If we reject one part, we reject it all. If we accept one part then we must accept the lot. These instructions are from the Bible, if they're ignored, error is the result and teachers of the Bible are warned that they will be held to a much stricter judgement than those who don't teach. So this is a very serious business with potentially catastrophic consequences to those who get it wrong and on these three highly controversial issues a large part of the Christian church has made some grave errors and they're impacting Governments, law, social policy and public opinion.

CHAPTER ONE

Human Existence or Human Happiness?

All humanity is enslaved to one major fear: death! We can't avoid it. It sits there waiting for us like a great big dead end. It influences every decision we make about our lives and colours our interpretation of every conceivable kind of event. We are finite beings clinging desperately to our physical existence seeing nothing beyond it.

Ever heard, or used, the expression, "You only live once!"? That statement has been used to justify a myriad of wrong and hurtful choices. What about, "Life is short, get it while you can." or "Just live for today 'cause you're a long time dead." There is almost an insanity to this way of thinking and it leaves a sea of social carnage in it's wake.

Where does this philosophy come from? **Who told the people that this life is all there is?** Well, it didn't come from the Bible! Surprised? I don't blame you, especially when you consider that almost every religion, including Christianity, preaches about hell (eternal torment following death) or Secularist religions who preach that death is permanent and nothing lies beyond it. It doesn't seem to matter what you believe, death, under any of these conditions is definitely something to be feared and avoided at all costs.

So how did religion get it so wrong? Because man put his interpretation on what the scriptures meant instead of letting the Bible interpret itself. From the very beginning, God placed eternity into the hearts of mankind; which is why we just cannot accept the idea of being dead forever. **Ever wonder why we sleep?** There is no reason whatsoever why human beings were created to need sleep every 24 hours. A few subtle changes in our physical makeup and we could stay awake every day and night throughout our lives. No, the only reason for creating human beings so that we all need sleep was to provide a permanent illustration of physical death and resurrection.

WHAT YOU NEVER KNEW ABOUT SLEEP

The last moment of consciousness for every one that has ever died is all they remember, until they wake up again. We've all experienced it. Remember the last time you had a really busy day and you came home exhausted? You decide to go to bed early and give yourself nine hours sleep instead of the usual eight. The moment your head hits the pillow you go out like a light, the very next second your alarm goes off and it's bright daylight outside. Where did the nine hours go? You experienced what the "experts" call slow-wave or delta sleep, where the body almost completely shuts down and brain activity is virtually on a standby mode. This kind of sleep is very good for your health and general well-being and when you do awake you feel extremely relaxed and rested. **Well, in a nutshell, that's death.** The vast majority of humanity that has died has no concept of passing time. Someone who died four thousand years ago could wake up tomorrow and think that less than a second had just passed. At the appointed time they will wake up in new physical bodies (exact replicas of what they had before) but in a very different world to the one they left.

LIFE OR DEATH, WE DECIDE!

Now I know what you're thinking. You're thinking the same thing I did when I first came across this. If everything you have just read is true (and according to scripture it is) then I can live my life however I want and I still get another shot at life after my death. On the contrary, **we are held accountable for what we know and believe** and this chapter is all about contrasting the difference between our obsession with **length of life versus quality of life**. Too often, one is traded off against the other. It may surprise you to learn that God is very concerned about the quality of our lives and desires that we (all humanity) should enjoy good health, long life, happy relationships, security and prosperity.

But it comes down to that old chestnut: "It's MY way, or the broad highway that leads to destruction." What destruction? Open your newspapers and they will tell you. Switch on your TV and watch the News and they will tell you. It's the destruction of marriages and the family. The destruction manifested as addictions, pornography and sexual perversions. The destruction of poverty, disablement, mental and physical illness, of violence, rape, murder and war.

When God said to the ancient nation of Israel, "Keep my commandments so that you and your descendants may live." **He wasn't saying that they would all suddenly die if they didn't**; He was indicating that their time on Earth would be a much happier one if they did keep His commandments. They would enjoy real life, abundance and happiness, protection from their enemies and good health.

However, if they chose to ignore those commandments, the consequences for themselves, for their families and children would be catastrophic. Their harvest would start to fail, illness would increase, violence in their society would increase, families would break down, their enemies would flourish until finally they would be taken into

captivity and suffer the most appalling cruelty. Yet they would still be alive, but they would be dead inside.

In most countries, if the father leaves the wife and children to fend for themselves, the consequence is normally exposure to danger, descent into poverty and finally poor health and early death. In the West and most developed countries we have welfare safety nets to help those left in circumstances like this. But the analogy still stands; God is our Spiritual Father, while we remain separated from Him and ignore His way of doing things, we expose ourselves to all manner of difficulties and danger. When Jesus was asked by one of his disciples if he could go and bury his father, He said, **“Let the dead bury their own dead.”** From Gods’ perspective, human beings who are detached from their Creator by disobedience, outright rejection or even through just sheer ignorance are dead. Spiritual zombies alive in their bodies but dead in their spirit.

Why do people get high on alcohol and drugs? Why do we pursue high risk activities that result in illness, accidents and early death? **Why are we so incredibly self-destructive in what we think, say and do?** How can we be so accomplished, successful and happy one day and ready to jump under a bus the next? What makes us so fearful of doing the right things, over which we should have control and so reckless and cavalier when it comes to doing the wrong things that we know will cause us harm?

THE DEVIL IS NOT A MYTH

Because the whole of humanity lives under an influence that desires to see us destroyed. This influence is incredibly powerful and oh so subtle. He’s been depicted in cartoons with horns, hooves and a tail. Different religions refer to him as a shadowy, frightening depiction of an ugly, evil, man-like creature. All these descriptions are illustrative of our over-worked, superstitious imagination. The truth is; no one

has ever seen him. He is described in the Bible as Lucifer, one of the three great Archangels, and of these three Lucifer was the most beautiful and the most powerful. He had every reason to believe that one day he would inherit, or at least share, the throne of God. But when he was told about Gods' plan to create the world of men, that they would be called children of God, that there would be billions of them and that they would be related to God Himself, he realised that the power and position he coveted would never be his.

At this point, he became angry, resentful and forgetful. Forgetting that he had been given life, power, position and authority by God Himself. His pride made him forget that, without God, he would not even exist. **So he set about winning the angels under him into his way of thinking.** He perverted their thinking so that they too became resentful of God and succeeded in turning one third of all the angels against God. He then led them in the very first recorded attempt at a coup de ta, to overthrow God Himself. Did he succeed? Obviously not. The war was disastrous for the cosmos that must have been devastated by the spill over effects of this event. Our biggest recorded war-time event was the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki with nuclear weapons. Can you even imagine a battle that featured some of the most powerful beings in the Universe and the devastation that would have been caused?

The most lethal consequence of this great battle was what happened to Lucifer and all the angels who followed him. Lucifer's' nature was now permanently changed, so God re-named him as Satan (which means adversary, or enemy of God). As for the angels that followed him? Well, they would no longer be referred to as angels but as Demons (which means rebels, or disobedient servants). Where are they now? **They are right here on Earth.** Yes, ON Earth, not in the Earth. They do not exist in some deep underground chamber full of fire as some religions would have you believe. They exist among us and they are busy doing the same work they were doing prior to the rebellion. Only this time, instead of seeking to turn other angels

against God, they are now busy turning mankind against God and, to date, they have been very successful.

This process of influencing our nature begins at birth. Every human being is subject to this influence and grows up with it. How many mothers can testify to the so-called “terrible twos” when a young infant begins to test the boundaries placed on him by his parents. Good parents know the importance of appropriate correction when dealing with a wayward child and, if coupled with wise education and a good example by the parents, that child can be kept from the worst excesses of his human nature. However, failure to properly discipline, instruct and mentor that child can and will be ruinous for that child’s future. He/she will grow up exercising little, if any, restraint and will fall into ever greater depths of depravity and personal despair. But it doesn’t end there. If they also end up having children, their history and the consequences of their past actions will also fall onto their children and that cycle will continue until the third or fourth generation of that family line until some of the lessons of this life have finally been learned.

LIFE OR DEATH HAS ALWAYS BEEN A CHOICE

So we have a choice, or do we? We know we cannot choose our parents. We know we cannot choose the time and location of our birth. We know we cannot choose our siblings and wider family members, so where is the choice? **Well we do have this thing called: “Free moral agency” or “Freedom of choice** when making decisions or responding to events”. Some of our most compelling stories come from people who are born into the worst kind of situations and then make a success of their lives in spite of their desperate circumstances. These people made choices that led them toward good health, successful relationships and prosperity. They got to know about these choices either by accident or through education and then had the motivation to make the right choice. Most of us don’t.

Instead, we find ourselves led astray by lust, greed, envy, laziness, wrath, gluttony and pride; commonly referred to as the seven deadly sins or: **the seven deadly hallmarks of our human nature**. A more accurate definition would be to describe these seven deadly sins as the traits or motivational force of our fallen nature. These traits motivate us or drive us to commit sin. These sins can be lying, stealing, sexual immorality (any sexual act that takes place outside of marriage), cursing, injury to or murder of another with intent, along with many, many others. It's just who we are but there are degrees of offence. An employee who steals a pencil from his employer will not cause the collapse of the Company, but would that same person think twice about raiding the Company's' pension fund to finance his own lavish lifestyle and change the rules of the Company to enable him to do it? He probably wouldn't hesitate because the same motivation for stealing a pencil indicates a propensity for dishonesty that, if left unchecked, would lead to embezzlement and theft on a grand scale.

It's these motivational traits that cause us to wander down that broad path to our own destruction and the destruction of those round about us. **We end up in prison, broke, homeless, sick, addicted, depressed. Or, we could end up rich, powerful and totally insane, completely oblivious to the welfare of others.** Then we become hateful, proud, cruel and vindictive, carrying out acts of such depravity that we inspire fear and terror in others that, in turn, start wars and all the misery, famine, disease and pain that emanate from that.

That's our world ladies and gentleman and everyone of us, to a greater or lesser degree, is responsible for it. **It's this life that Jesus described as death: living death, or, the way of death.** In the West we have worked hard to alleviate some of the worst effects of this way of life but it's a losing battle because those motivations, we were talking about earlier, just keep getting stronger and stronger.

CAN WE HEAL OUR SPIRIT?

We can medicate most forms of illness, sickness and disability but rarely cure them completely and even when we do it just becomes a stepping stone to yet another problem. As I mentioned earlier, human beings are one part physical body, one part soul and one part spirit. If there is a problem in our spiritual self it is manifested in our flesh. As human beings we concentrate on curing the flesh but that's not how Jesus did it. **Jesus healed people by forgiving their sins.** Disabilities, mental problems, sickness, disease, paralysis, all cured with a word from the Creator. Even the disciples were granted that power and, by extension, the Church. **Do you ever think it strange how few people will go to a church Pastor, Priest or Minister to be healed of an ailment?** The most common reason given is that it never seems to work. Well, the Bible says it does work, but only in a certain way and if the Pastor, Priest or Minister is not familiar with that way then obviously he will be unable to help.

Look at all the effort that's being put into finding a cure for cancer, alzheimers, tumours, spinal injuries, aids, Leukaemia, Schizophrenia and every other malady you can think of. Billions of dollars, millions of man hours, genetic manipulation and experimental mutation. Will this bring us any closer to a cure and if so, at what cost to medical ethics? **Will finding a cure help change the behaviour that contributed to that malady,** or will they and the rest of society go on to repeat the behaviour because if they get sick they know there is now a cure?

MEDICAL LIMITS

Ever visited a Doctor and heard him say, "If you don't change your ways you're going to wind up worse than ever or even dead"? The Doctor's warning may be justified but what will he say when the patient asks him what part of my life do I need to change? **The Doctor may be skilled in medical care but he is not qualified to judge the**

life of any one individual. If he sees liver damage he may advise the patient to quit drinking but suppose the patient is a very light drinker and doesn't abuse alcohol. **The scientific community is determined in its quest to attribute one specific form of behaviour to one specific symptom,** so it looks for a pattern of characteristics that are common among people suffering from the same symptoms and then warns society against the behaviour that their studies reveal is common to those sufferers. But life is just not that simple. Smoking is linked to lung disease but there are many people who contract lung disease who have never smoked a cigarette in their lives. On that same issue we have people who have smoked for most of their lives who have never contracted this disease.

Every time we think we have a handle on the cause behind a medical problem, we find anomalies. People get sick when they shouldn't, other people, who ignore medical advice, stay robustly healthy. Some patients respond to treatment, others don't. Look at viral infections that are spread either by touch or are air-borne. It's just not true to say that it affects everybody. Some people who come into close proximity with the disease are immune to its effects. Is this some kind of lottery? Is this luck, chance, random acts of good or bad fortune? **Let's not get superstitious. Let's be practical.** If you visit a doctor and you have a symptom that is not clearly identifiable, the doctor will take you through a series of tests and examinations to determine the precise cause of your distress. In doing so, he may have to ask you very personal questions about your lifestyle and your habits. Let's be honest, this can be embarrassing, even painful but we all agree that this kind of examination is necessary to form an accurate diagnosis of the problem. The Bible does this as well, only it goes much deeper and is much more revealing than a medical examination. **The recommended treatment will always involve a lifestyle change,** a change in attitude, a change in habits, even a change in the way we think, but the treatment always works. No pills, no operations but a steady application of a new way of life that will lead to good health and a peaceful

state of mind. We can still avail ourselves of medical treatment if we want to but it shouldn't replace the healing process identified in the Word of God.

The Bible is so practical. It educated us about the benefits of cleanliness and hygiene long before science discovered bacteria. It taught us about genetic abnormalities, and the causes behind it long, before we discovered it. The Bible claimed understanding about astronomical data long before Galileo, while we still thought and taught that the Earth was flat or that the Sun goes around the Earth rather than the other way around. **The Bible is frighteningly accurate on every subject that it covers.** Its warnings should be heeded. Its claims investigated and its advice, on any given subject, should be taken seriously. It's our instruction manual for having the good life; what to avoid and what to pursue. It points the way to health, happiness, prosperity, peace and protection.

It tells us how we can have the benefits of the Kingdom of Heaven here on Earth; one human being at a time. **A thief can become a generous giver,** an adulterous man can become a faithful husband, a violent, brutal maniac can be transformed into a gentle, peaceable, kind person that is a joy to be around. You cannot change another person and neither can I but, we can change ourselves by practical application of the teachings of the Bible which will, ultimately, lead to the restoration of our lost relationship with our Spiritual Father.

THE POWER OF WISE INSTRUCTION

Of course, to accomplish this, you need a teacher. Someone who knows what they're talking about. Someone who, through careful study and application of the principals being taught, is qualified to educate the student on that subject. Suppose you want to study mathematics. Who, out of the following, would make the best teacher? Is it:

a) A tenured professor who has spent his life in academia who will regurgitate the principals and lessons discovered by others? Nothing wrong with that, you may say, but **knowledge is constantly evolving** and practical experience may have nullified part of what this professor is teaching and been replaced by greater insight from someone new on the same subject.

OR

b) A gifted teacher who loves his subject, who constantly checks for new break-throughs, **who willingly challenges the status quo when it cannot stand up to forensic examination.** This person inspires his students and opens their minds to incredible possibilities within the framework of this subject. The principals and disciplines remain but the new frontiers of knowledge are constantly pursued. That is a teacher worth having and few students in this life get the opportunity to study their subjects under this kind of inspirational leadership but they are out there and they are worth finding.

Another critical point: Person B may be the ideal maths teacher and, within that discipline, he may be highly effective. But, what if his subject overlaps onto something like Physics. His understanding on that subject may be very limited and, his attempt to include that in his syllabus, may be sincere but his abilities are constrained by his lack of focus in this new area. **Now, he's trying to put his square peg in a round hole.**

His students would be much better served if they were given access to a teacher who has devoted his life to Physics and can instruct the maths' teachers' students on how their understanding of mathematics has practical application in the world of Physics. But, all too often, **pride gets in the way** along with many other human frailties and the teachers who succumb to these natural traits do not then serve the best interests of their students.

THE SERPENT IN THE CHURCH

Guess what! This happens in the Church as well. The Bible covers a myriad of subjects many, of which, need focused study, application and experience before they can be properly taught. Instead, we have too many generalists who, by virtue of promotion through the ranks, are suddenly considered experts on every conceivable subject. **This has led to an abundance of error, half-truths and theological nonsense** and then we wonder why so many Christians are confused.

In all fairness though, we do have some excellent teachers who are highly gifted and totally focused on their area of expertise. These are men and women across all denominations who have found their niche and apply themselves faithfully to their vocation. When their subject overlaps with another, they readily seek out the expert in that related field and invite him/her to address their students, even if this expert is from another denomination.

This ideal state is rarer than it should be as **pride, fear and suspicion are still far too prevalent in the Church** as a whole but it's getting better, albeit very slowly. However, some of the consequences of this theological confusion has been the over-simplistic position adopted by a large part of the Christian Church on the subjects of: Abortion, Homosexuality and End-of-Life issues.

Whatever your beliefs may be, what you are about to discover on these issues, from Gods' viewpoint, is truly amazing . . .

CHAPTER TWO

When Does an Egg Become a Chicken?

Abortion has become one of the most contentious social and political issues of our time. There is a major polarisation between the Pro-choice and the Pro-life groups that has little prospect of being bridged. Inflammatory language used on both sides serves only to heighten the differences and, more and more, emotion is the basis for forming beliefs rather than cool, calm, rational judgement.

Pro-choice advocates contend that a woman's' right to make decisions about her own reproductive processes are a matter for her alone. That, attempts by Government, the Law, religious groups or the wider community, to impose their views and opinions upon her is to subvert her right of free will. They contend that the right to abort a pregnancy must belong exclusively to the mother and no attempt should be made to restrict that choice or restrict the safe and healthy means by which that choice can be exercised. We will look more closely at the Pro-choice position in the next chapter.

For now, we will be concentrating on the arguments put forward by the Pro-life campaigners. Specifically, **their contention that full human life begins at conception.** If that position is correct, then their arguments for using words like foeticide, murder and genocide when

describing abortion is justified and we should do everything in our power to stop it.

We have already discovered from the Bible that a human being is composed of flesh (his body), the soul (his mind function) and the human spirit (his life source). So, at what point are all these things brought together? Does it occur at conception? Does it happen at 28 weeks? Or, does this only happen at birth?

THE BREATH OF LIFE

In the book of Genesis, we are told that the very first man created by God was fully formed. In other words, FULLY GROWN, or, fully matured in the flesh. Biologically speaking, he was complete. But, he was not breathing, his heart was not beating, he had no mind function, no reflexes. **He was fully formed, fully matured but, to all intents and purposes, he was dead.** So God came to the rescue and performed CardioPulmonary Resuscitation or, CPR. No He didn't! Though you'll be amazed how many people, including Christians, think that He did. In describing the commencement of human life, God used a physical analogy that we can all relate to. He said that He breathed into the first man the breath of life. Biologically speaking, the man began to breathe, his heart began to beat, the blood began to flow and receive oxygen that brought life to all the extremities of his body. His mind began to think and receive input through the 5 senses and he became conscious and self aware. **That phrase: "The Breath of Life" also refers to his human spirit.** Without that, we cease to exist. To complete this short but fascinating account of the beginning of human life, God said: "And Man became a Living Being!"

The Bible is packed full of scriptures that attest to the fact **that God equates the spirit of man with the breath of life.** This presents a major problem for the pro-life movement because this fact alone discounts the possibility of a foetus being treated as an independent life

form. But let's not be hasty. There are other proven facts within the biological process of pregnancy that must be addressed before we can rule either way.

We know, for instance, that an ultrasound scan proves that the foetus has a heartbeat. We also know that the foetus has blood flowing through its veins and this process is contributing to its growth. Now, strictly speaking, this is impossible. There is no way that a foetal heart beat is possible without the breath of life. Blood flow without oxygen is also impossible. We know the foetus cannot possibly be breathing so where is this life force coming from?

You've already guessed the answer. The foetus has no life force. No breath, no spirit. **It is getting everything it needs to grow from the mother.**

It is the breath of life, or the spirit, of the mother that is enabling the foetus to grow. **If the mother dies, the foetus dies.** When the mother eats, the foetus is nourished, when the mother breathes, the foetus receives oxygen. **The life force of the mother enables the heart beat of the foetus.** At no point during the pregnancy does the foetus have independent life.

Even if the pregnancy is carried to full term and the baby is delivered from the womb, there is still no guarantee of independent life until the baby begins breathing on its own, unassisted! That baby will not receive its independent life force until it draws its own breath. **No breath, no spirit. No breath, no life!**

MORE THAN JUST APRON STRINGS

Every midwife knows that once the baby is delivered from the womb, a small but highly significant operation has to take place that is highly symbolic. This is where the midwife has to cut the

umbilical cord which severs the dependance of the foetus on the mothers' life force to sustain it. From this moment on, the foetus will either become an independent living entity, by taking its first breath or it won't. There's no middle ground, no confusion. **Either life will start, or it won't.** That first breath is often accompanied by crying as the baby receives consciousness for the very first time. There is not a mother in the world that doesn't breathe a sigh of relief when she hears this.

Still borns are often given emergency CPR in order to try and start life. Sometimes this is successful, sometimes it isn't. If the baby is placed in an incubator with machines attached that are doing the breathing for it, **it is still not proof of life.** The baby is not conscious. The machines are providing artificial stimulation that are keeping the lungs and heart going, but there is no life without independent, unassisted breathing.

WHEN MOM STARTS TWITCHING

What about movement? During pregnancy, virtually all women can attest to the fact that they can feel their baby "kicking". Surely this is evidence of independent life? Expectant mothers, joyfully anticipating the arrival of a new son or daughter, will use all manner of words to describe the movement inside them. Expectant mothers are very protective of this potential new life. As far as most of them are concerned, it's a done deal. This is no foetus, this is their son or daughter and **they will rhapsodise about every little indication of that potential life.** The pro-life movement likes to quote the Bible on this very point. In the book of Luke, the young woman, Mary, who is pregnant with the one who is to become Jesus, goes off to visit her pregnant cousin Elizabeth. As soon as Elizabeth hears Mary's voice, she tells the writer: Luke, that she felt the baby inside her leap for joy. This account also says that at that very same moment, Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit.

All these movements are real but they're entirely linked to all the biological functions of the mother and are proof positive of the healthy growth of the foetus. We know that if we have a kidney that no longer ceases to function there are external and internal indications that something is wrong. A mother knows instinctively if the growth of the foetus has stalled because **a disconnect has taken place between all the biological functions of the mother and the foetus inside her.** Like a blocked artery to a limb, the flow of blood, oxygen and nervous stimuli has been interrupted which means the organ, the limb or, in this case, the foetus, has died.

Now let me pause for a moment. So far, as the writer of this book, I have kept my personal feelings out of this story. My intent, as stated earlier, is to get to the truth behind what are very emotive issues. I am intensely aware of the fact that, for many readers, the issues we are covering may be striking a raw nerve, especially among women. I have seen the pictures of aborted foetuses and heard and read the descriptions of the methods employed by doctors to carry out abortions and I would not be human if I was to say I was not affected by what I saw. **But there is a right and a wrong way to pursue issues that we feel very strongly about.** There is no doubt in my mind that many in the Pro-life movement have been going about their protest in the wrong way. My intention is to strip away the misinformation and misleading assertions that have characterised so much of the Pro-life movement and, instead, replace it with the truth. The truth as discovered by Science. The truth as experienced by ordinary people and, most importantly, the truth as revealed in Gods' handbook to mankind: The Bible. Then, and only then, will the Pro-life movement be able to move forward on the abortion issue from a position of strength and truth, rather than error and misjudgement.

So let's return to this issue of movement. If we accept that the foetus is not conscious and therefore unable to move of its own volition, what women experience as "kicking" can only come from their own

physical response to an outside stimulus. Just as your hands and feet can sometimes twitch involuntarily. That is to say, you have not made a conscious decision to twitch. It's a physical reflex but that doesn't mean that your hand is moving of it's own accord. Its attached to your body and your nervous system. **The foetus makes no movement of its own accord.** It twitches and responds to the nervous system of the mother. That description that Elizabeth gave about her baby leaping was a direct response to her own physiological reaction on hearing Mary's' voice. This reaction was further stimulated by her being filled with the Holy spirit at that very same moment.

SILENT SCREAM OR BAD DREAM!

On this same issue, when tests were being conducted to determine if the foetus could feel pain, it was reported that the foetus appeared to withdraw when subjected to a painful stimuli. This is only possible if the foetus is conscious. Everything we've covered so far tells us that is impossible, so what's going on? First of all, the claims were quietly downgraded to being "inconclusive". In scientific terms what this means is that when the exact same tests are conducted under the exact same conditions, they don't get the same response. **Therefore the claims are theoretical, unproven, inconsistent and illegitimate.** However, the responses described did occur on some pregnant patients, so how do we account for that? **The only possible explanation for any foetal reflex is that it originated from the mother.** Her womb may have contracted if she was nervous about any harm coming to her child. The foetus did not initiate the movement, the mother did.

There are several claims within the Pro-life movement that insist that the Bible is crystal clear on the subject of abortion and the value of the foetus as having independent life status. If they are right then all the explanations you have read up to this point would have to be discounted. But are they right? Well, let's see:

IS ABORTION MURDER?

The most serious accusation levelled at women who have abortions and those who carry them out is the charge of murder. The Bible states categorically, "Thou shalt not kill!" So is that the end of the story? Definitely not! We must remember that **the Bible claims to be 100% accurate and never contradicts itself.** In numerous places we find that God actually commands the killing of people, sometimes entire nations. Individuals who commit certain acts are commanded to be put to death. So this commandment does not have the universal application that some teachers claim. A better rendering of this verse that takes into account the other explanations within the Bible would be: "You shall not take a life without the permission of a God-ordained lawful authority!" So where does that leave abortion? Well, life is not considered to be present without breath. **So, no life, no death! No death, no condemnation.** No condemnation, no sin. No sin, no judgement.

It is important to stress at this point that the act of abortion itself is not considered to be a sin. However, there are certain other factors involved that are condemned and these will be looked at more closely in the next chapter. But, just to clarify, a woman who terminates her pregnancy and the medical staff who assist in that procedure are neither condemned or justified by that action. **As far as the Bible is concerned, they're innocent.** Anyone who claims otherwise are merely articulating their opinion and are guilty of a false witness if they seek to use the Bible toward such ends.

Another scripture, often cited to prove the independent life status of a foetus is in the book of Exodus. Here, a pregnant woman gets too close to a group of men who are fighting, she is struck and gives birth prematurely. The verse goes on to say that the man responsible will be punished if there is only temporary harm or, lose his life if there is permanent harm. Harm to who? Either the woman or her child. **But**

the punishment or compensation is for the sake of the parents, who may have lost a prospective child or caused the mother permanent reproductive injury, or even her death. In most western countries, our own laws recognise the fragile state of a pregnant woman and punish more severely any act of violence against her. Does this verse prove foetal rights? Absolutely not.

THE HUMAN SPIRIT

In Psalm 139, the Pro-life argument is that God is rhapsodising about the formation of a new life in the womb. That argument is nothing more than an opinion, but that opinion cannot be accurate because it would create contradictions within the Bible. The Bible interprets itself **and the interpretation deals with the human spirit that will soon have an earthly home**. His eyes see our substance being yet unformed. He knew us before our earthly home was ever conceived. There is an extension to this point that I think is worth pursuing. If a woman has a miscarriage or abortion, she will, without any prompting, think of that foetus as a lost life. But that's not true. **The human spirit never entered the body that was being formed inside her**. Had the pregnancy been carried to full term, with a successful delivery and the taking of that first breath, then the spirit designated for that body would have been given. But if that pregnancy is terminated for whatever reason and a while later the mother conceives again, **then that same spirit will reside in the later birth, so no child is lost**.

It's very disheartening to see the Bible used as a tool to promote the misconceptions of an entire movement, but that's exactly what's happened. The Bible is quoted out of context, manipulated and perverted to uphold an ideological stand that creates superstition, bigotry and delusion. **Sound judgement is replaced by hysteria**. Calm, rational analysis is rejected by orthodox dogma and plain common sense is branded as heretical.

PRO-LIFE PRIORITIES

Are there any redeeming features to the Pro-life movement? Of course there are. Promoting the stability of marriage and the family are very worthwhile efforts. In fact, their work, in this regard, is crucial to the maintaining of a balanced, law-abiding, stable society. **Marriage brings honour to both husbands and wives**, it brings two extended families together creating a crucial pool of influence that can assist the couple in the raising of their children. **Their relationship is recognised world-wide.** Their employers appreciate the stability it brings. Their community both recognises and benefits from their lifetime commitment to one another. Everything about marriage can bring health, happiness, prosperity, harmony and long life.

At this point, some of my readers may be thinking, "This guy lives in La La Land, those are not the marriages I've seen". Well, if that is what some of you are thinking, your scepticism does deserve a response. And this goes back to what we were talking about earlier. There are many people out there who were either raised in homes where they saw violence and abuse in their parent's marriage, or, they actually did get married and their partner violated that trust in some way causing the marriage to fall apart. **Why are these marriages failing? Because laws have been broken.** What laws? The laws that govern marriage. Who should be teaching them? The Pro-life advocates. Why? Because in a stable marriage, children are wanted, loved, nurtured, protected, mentored and valued. **That is one Pro-life stance that would be appreciated by nearly everyone.**

TRUE RELIGION IS THIS . . .

The Bible is packed full of advice and revelation on these subjects and definitely should form the basis from which these teachings come. **What about unwanted children?** Let me clarify what I mean

by unwanted children, I mean those that have been born, that are conscious and living. Children whose parents have died, or whose parents have abandoned them, or children who have run away from cruelty and abuse. Real live human beings. Society's "Little Ones", what about them? Foster parents, adoption agencies, children's homes, mentoring programs for teens, drug rehabilitation. **The needs of these kids are gigantic and very real** and these needs can be found in every Country on Earth. But the resources to meet those needs? Well, that's a different story. The fact is we do have the resources to meet the needs of these children but we are channelling them toward more self-indulgent, "less difficult" challenges.

Instead of marching, we should be mentoring. **Instead of agitating, we should be adopting.** Instead of carping, we should be caring. Instead of barracking, we should be building.

If the Pro-life movement were to put all its considerable resources into positive programs for helping these "real" children have **the quality of life that God truly desires them to have**, then they would go from being derided to being applauded. Of course, investment in these children would be time consuming, require boundless effort and require a very long term commitment. **The accolades are few and self sacrifice, a necessity.** Ask any parent! The rewards over the long term, however, are incalculable and God has made great and precious promises to those who commit themselves to such a cause.

Those who defend the poor and the oppressed. Those who intercede for the widows and the orphans. Those who are friends to outcasts, who feed the hungry and house the homeless. **These are the true Pro-lifers!** These are the people who understand the difference between Pro-existence and REAL Pro-life. These are the people who both live and teach about the way to healthy, happy, abundant living that God desires all of us to experience.

PRO-LIFE, CON-DEMNED

But, as things presently stand, Pro-lifers are distracted by misguided peripheral issues that have very little to do with the God-given responsibilities of the Christian community. We have become identified with the extreme position taken on these issues and we're running away from what our primary focus should be. As a consequence, **Christians are now aligned with Pro-lifers in the public mind.** We are seen as extremists, dictatorial, unloving and unforgiving slanderers.

We are seen as oppressing the weakest and most vulnerable members of society. How? By our condemnation of women who have abortions. This exposes them to ridicule, shame and guilt-laden depression. **As a consequence, we help engineer their poverty,** their self-destructive behaviour and implicitly label them as whores and harlots. To top it all off we then threaten them with eternal damnation if they don't repent of this "terrible sin"!

The unfortunate irony to all this is how secular society now better reflects the good judgement and compassionate virtues of what should be the hallmarks of contemporary Christianity. Society recognises and celebrates the right of an individual to make their own moral choices within a framework of legal safeguards designed to protect others. Some of those safeguards are endorsed by the Bible, some are not. **Christians need to rediscover what they are permitted to do** and what they are not to do when interacting with wider society. We must never seek to IMPOSE our beliefs on others. People resent that and the Bible expressly forbids it.

BETTER PRIORITIES

If we read in the newspapers that the Government is considering stem cell research to try and find a cure for alzheimers, we can respectfully disagree but not without offering an alternative solution (**as**

Christians, we should be aware there most certainly is one). If we hear that birth control options are being offered to 14 year olds, we can protest but not without offering a viable, alternative solution. We have to EARN the respect of wider society through service, assistance, help and support. If we do that then maybe our opinion (so long as it has full Biblical endorsement) will be welcomed rather than resented.

For now, the current position adopted by the Pro-life movement cannot withstand Biblical, factual or scientific scrutiny. When they present conjecture as fact, they undermine the core tenets of the Christian faith and twist the scriptures to suit their own dogmatic opinions. They are constantly seeking Judicial and Political recognition of their stance and use an unwittingly, complicit media to accomplish this. Rallies, picketing of abortion clinics, threats to excommunicate politicians and civic leaders who refuse to indulge their radical bias, all make good headlines. In extreme cases, we see real murder, or assaults on medical staff who carry out termination procedures. **Where is Jesus in all this? He is nowhere to be seen.**

There is one aspect of the abortion debate that does deserve universal condemnation. If a woman, of her own volition, makes a freewill decision to terminate her pregnancy, that is one thing. However, in some Countries there are women who desperately want to carry their pregnancies to full-term and raise their children who are being deliberately prevented from doing so. There are instances of forced abortions which is an act of violence against the mother. There are instances of enforced sterilisations which is a form of aggravated rape. In some cases, a baby is actually born to the mother and is physically breathing but is then killed by an official. That is out and out murder. This cruel and savage practise brings great condemnation on any Government or group that endorses or carries out such crimes and is **yet another reason why we need to properly differentiate between freewill choices and officially sanctioned cruelty and murder.**

The next chapter examines the Pro-choice agenda? Do they have the answer? No, not really, but their position certainly brings us closer to some rather ugly truths and . . . some extraordinary revelations about women that even women themselves may never have realised!!!

CHAPTER THREE

Why Men Keep on Having Abortions!

In a snug ranch home in the middle of the suburbs, a young mother is busy getting dinner ready for her family. All of a sudden, her five year old daughter comes running into the kitchen shouting: "Mommy, mommy, when I grow up I want to have an abortion!"

Has that ever happened? In all of human history, in any nation in the World, has something like this ever happened? No, it hasn't. However, there are plenty of mothers who can testify to the time when their 5 year old daughters came running in shouting: "Mommy, mommy, when I grow up I want to have a baby!" or, "I want to marry a Prince!" So what on Earth would ever possess a young woman to terminate a pregnancy? Why would she do it? Who killed her dream?

You're going to be amazed by the following statement but it's absolutely true: In all the rhetoric surrounding the issues of abortion, you will not find a single reference relating to the culpability of men as the ultimate cause behind all abortions. That's right, all of them! You may think there are exceptions but there aren't and I'll explain that in a moment.

Only one woman has ever experienced what the Church refers to as an immaculate conception. That is, becoming pregnant without the implanting of sperm from a man. That woman was Mary, the mother

of Jesus; though she later went on to have other children by more conventional means with her husband Joseph. **For all other women, their means of conception, whether forced or voluntary, occurred through intercourse.** The reason why I mention such an obvious fact is to confirm that women do not get pregnant by themselves, there is a male presence involved and his involvement is central to the entire abortion question.

ABORTING THE WOMAN

So what are the reasons behind abortion, not just in the West but around the World? They can be categorised as follows:

RAPE: This can be forced or violent intercourse from a stranger, a family member, a husband or a boyfriend that results in pregnancy.

INCEST: Intercourse with a male family member, primarily the father or brother. In many cases the female will be very young and consent is obtained by manipulation and abuse of trust. When pregnancy results, the male responsible will often arrange the abortion himself to try and cover up his actions.

RELATIONSHIP FAILURE: Possibly the single biggest reason behind why a woman would elect to terminate a pregnancy because she does not want to raise a child by herself with all the attendant problems of lack of support: financial, emotional, physical.

INTIMIDATION: This is where the husband or boyfriend threatens to leave if she goes ahead with the pregnancy and/or refuses any measure of support.

POVERTY: Where lack of finances, home, car, job are already causing great strain and having a child at this stage of her life would greatly increase personal hardship.

PEER PRESSURE: This could include concerns about bringing shame upon herself and the family, pressure from parents because they feel she's too young and/or disapproval of the man who got her pregnant.

HEALTH PROBLEMS: If the mother is disabled or has a pre-existing debilitating condition that would be exacerbated by the pregnancy or the fetus is found to be deformed and/or predisposed to major health problems.

So how are men responsible for all the above? Well, before we can answer that question, we have to deal with the subject of equality.

SOME ARE MORE EQUAL THAN OTHERS

Equality for women is a relatively new phenomenon. In 1903, a woman by the name of Emmeline Pankhurst officially launched a political campaign for female emancipation in London, England. Her primary focus was to give women the vote, provide equal pay for equal work, equal treatment under the law governing marriage and divorce, rights over children for both parents, maternity benefits and equality of rights and opportunities for women in public service. **Her motivation for pursuing these objectives came from her horror at witnessing the cruelty, suffering and deprivation suffered not just by women but also the elderly and children.** During the course of their campaign, the suffragettes, as they came to be known, were imprisoned, force-fed, raped and brutally beaten, often by their own male relatives. Their desire for equal treatment under the law was preceded by campaigns to end slavery, but their harsh treatment by both Government and society was predicated on the belief that according to Christian teaching at the time, women were not equal with men and the laws and policies of the day reflected that.

We have come a long way since then. **Women now enjoy a level of freedom today that their great grandmothers could never have**

envisaged. Even in marriage, under the laws of that time, a wife was considered to be the property of her husband and could be abused with impunity (without fear of punishment). Some of the religious justification for that came from old Mosaic laws that served to reinforce the prejudice of the day. As before, I vehemently contend that the interpretation of these scriptures that brought about this injustice was seriously flawed. But what have the women of today done with these hard-won freedoms? **As we're about to see, female emancipation was designed to bring women out of slavery but it did not succeed in taking the slave out of women.**

The Pro-choice movement that campaigns vigorously for women's rights in all areas of life has hit a great big stone wall. That wall is not some bastion of male privilege or male-dominated area of injustice, **it's a state of mind that exists naturally in all women.** This condition, as described in the Bible, is a curse. It applies to all women regardless of race, class, intelligence or position. Before I tell you what this curse is, it should be noted that even among Christian women, who are supposed to be free of worldly constraints, this curse is still known to exist.

At the time of The Fall, as described in the book of Genesis, when Adam and Eve sinned, God came down to confront them about what had been done. He then went on to describe to them what the consequences would be to them and all that would come after them. Please note: **the consequences, as described, were gender specific.** For men, the curse applied to their work. For women, the curse applied to their relationships and the suffering involved in bearing children. Pregnancy, even today, is still an extremely hazardous process and many women, especially in the third world, still die giving birth to children or are afflicted with lifelong disablement or disease. However, for the purpose of this chapter, we are looking specifically at the curse on their relationships. God said to the woman that her desire would be toward her husband and that he would rule over her.

MEN RULE!

What does that mean? After all, most women will say that desiring their husband is surely a good thing, but that is not what God is talking about. **He is talking about worship, or, exceptionally high expectation.** To put it another way, He is talking about idolatry which is worship of the created rather than the Creator. Do all women do this? Yes, they do! Let me explain how it works. When a woman gets married, she goes into the relationship with certain expectations about her husband: that he will always put her first, that he will be a kind and considerate lover, that he will be a good provider, that he will protect her and stand up for her if she is insulted or threatened and that he will be a good father to her children and will always be faithful to her. Is there anything wrong with these expectations? Are you kidding me? **Who do women think they're marrying?**

Let me tell you! Your fathers, brothers and husbands are flesh and blood, just like you. As men we may be masculine but the difference ends there. Let's start with this expectation of being a kind and considerate lover. No chance, **men are predominantly selfish and care only about our own satisfaction.** We don't have the patience or inclination to learn how to be a good lover and we'll only use romance to get what we want. We also believe that, as our wives, you're under an obligation to satisfy our desires when we want regardless of how you may feel. As for putting our wives first, no, not if that interferes with our social life, our working life or other extra-marital interest.

What about being a good provider? Well let's just say that your husband has the best of intentions, that he works hard and readily accepts his role as the main bread winner, **just how much control do you think he really has?** His Company could downsize and he could lose his job in one day. He could be involved in an accident rendering

him incapable of working. He could die of an unexpected ailment. **A thousand different circumstances could arise that would undermine his ability to provide for you**, all outwith his control. So, relying on your husband to be a good provider is like hoping that vegetables will always stay fresh. It's an unrealistic expectation.

What about protection and security? Let's suppose you're married to a behemoth. A 300 pound, muscle-bound elephant of a guy. Does that guarantee your protection? Of course it doesn't. One bullet from a gun and he's down, one swift hit with a baseball bat and he's out for the count and **you and your children are left exposed to your potential assailants**. Or, again, he could get sick, injured or die unexpectedly.

How about being a good father? Well what does he know about raising children? He only knows what he experienced as a kid growing up. He could be an absolute monster; sweet to you but an absolute terror to your children. Or he may be a distant dad, unwilling or unable to be the father you want him to be.

Finally, there's faithfulness. That great big promise that men make to love their wife to the exclusion of all other women for the rest of their lives. **How many men keep that promise these days?** Temptation and distraction are everywhere. True lifelong faithfulness from men has almost become extinct and it rarely existed in the past.

So what do women do when their menfolk fail to live up to these unrealistic expectations? They complain, or nag. They become bitter and depressed, or they assume the grass will be greener if they take up with another man. Or, they will stick with their present husband sometimes enduring years and years of abuse always assuming that one day he may change. Why? **Because the curse is a state of mind** that will continue to exist until the woman changes the focus of her expectations from man back to God.

So let's try this exercise again, only this time we will look at a woman whose expectations are focused where they are supposed to be; on her Spiritual Father:

NO, GOD RULES!!

She desires her husband to be a kind and considerate lover. Jesus instructs men to love their wives as He loves the Church and gave Himself for her, so **her Father will motivate her husband to love her** in that way and instruct her on the part she must play to accomplish that. On the subject of provision? Again, so long as she seeks this from her Father and obeys His instructions concerning this part of her life, she will be fully provided for and, in most cases, **He will use her husband to supply this provision to her.** With regard to protection and security, God says that He will give His angels charge concerning you and your family, including your husband. **Your safety will become your Fathers' responsibility** so long as you continue to follow His ways. As for your husband being a good father, again your Spiritual Father will bless him with the sensitivity and insight that he needs to faithfully carry out his duties in this regard. When it comes to faithfulness and keeping your man from straying, this begins with your faithfulness to God Himself, putting Him and His ways first and foremost in every part of your life. **Remember, marriage is not a human invention.** It is a tri-part relationship: You, your husband and your Spiritual Father.

Any woman seeking to restore this lost relationship with her Spiritual Father will be released from this curse and her relationships, over time, will be fully restored. There is also a promise that the curse put on women concerning pregnancy and birth problems will also be removed so her joy will be fully complete.

LOVE, NOT WORSHIP!

So, what should a faithful woman expect to receive from her husband? NOTHING! All those expectations that women harbor in their hearts should be given over to God and her attitude, with regard to her husband, should be one of service not expectation. **If her husband does something right or exhibits noble and virtuous characteristics, she should point that out and encourage him to continue in that way of living.** She must also expressly thank her Father for this change in her husband and recognise that He is responsible for producing that change. Just think, **as a man there'll be no more nagging or complaining from our wives** but, of course, there'll be no more hero worship either. She knows what she's got, a great big blob of flesh with some potential. That should be the limit of her expectation.

IT'S NOT WHO HE IS, IT'S WHAT HE DOES!

Now let's return to the subject of equality. The Bible says that in the Spirit realm, women and men are totally equal. We can both inherit eternal life and there is no gender preference for those that do. However, **while we remain in the flesh, God says that man has authority over the woman**, that a man is the head of the wife and the head of the family. So what does this actually mean? Well first we have to understand what God means by authority and it can all be summed up in one word: ACCOUNTABILITY! **The buck stops with the man, he is responsible.** Does he have the right to make decisions that can over-rule his wife? Yes, he does. Can he ultimately decide how his children will be raised? Yes, he can. Man is empowered to make all the decisions regarding what happens to his wife and family. He can choose to be a dictatorial bully or a careless layabout. He can choose to be abusive and sexually promiscuous, even with his own children, or he can choose to be a kind, decent, upstanding man who loves his wife and is a good father to their children. **Whatever choices he makes, he, his wife and his family will bear the consequences.**

Now that's in marriage but what about other relationships? Outside of rape, if a woman consents to have sex with a man she becomes as one flesh with him, even if it is only for one night. As a result she will join with him in receiving with him any and all condemnation that rests on him from all his past decisions. For instance, he may be an HIV carrier but doesn't have the illness. One night with him and she could develop full-blown AIDS and die horribly. **That may not have been his intention but it doesn't matter.** He is responsible, the buck always stops with the man.

SOME MEN AND WOMEN MARRY FIVE TIMES A MONTH!

The following is a shocking statement yet absolutely true: **No woman has ever had sex with a boyfriend and no man has ever had sex with a girlfriend.** What does this mean? According to the Bible, the very act of intercourse creates marriage between the participants. This means that even in a one night stand, marriage has taken place between the man and the woman so **when they split up there is an instant divorce.** So how many wives has a man had? How many husbands has a woman had? There are terrible consequences to divorce, to both men and women and especially to any children that came from that relationship. It means that **even when you do choose to settle down with one particular partner, there is a curse on your life** that follows you into that relationship (some people refer to this as baggage) and it cannot be lifted without repentance. Women cannot afford to listen to the lies, deceits and propaganda that is perpetuated by the world through the media and peer pressure. They say casual sexual relationships are safe but **listening to their lies could decimate your life.** Instead, the next time you're on a date you could share what you've learned with the man you're with and, if he listens, you could save his life and your own.

Sorry ladies. **In the real world, there is no equality.** You really are at the mercy of men. You may live in a Country where the laws give you

some protection from the worst excesses of male stupidity but you're still vulnerable and in your relationships with men you need to be incredibly vigilant and not naive.

At the beginning of this chapter I said that all abortions are ultimately caused by men, without exception. So let's examine the Scientific, real-life-experience and Biblical proofs of why this is so.

THE MEN BEHIND ABORTIONS

We don't need to cover rape and incest, as the blame, as it relates to the men responsible is self-evident. What about relationship failure? This really is man at his most irresponsible. I should know, I used to be like this myself. This is what the Bible refers to as fornication, or what the world refers to as consenting adults, where a man and a woman engage in sexual activity outside of a life-long commitment to one another. Remember, man is ultimately responsible. A woman can flirt and tantalise 'till she's blue in the face but she cannot force a man to have sex with her, he can only do that of his own volition. So regardless of her part in this process, **it is the man who goes into the woman, not the other way round.** There is nothing more pathetic than a man who says that he couldn't help himself. A man is a free moral agent able to choose his actions and he doesn't engage in sexual activity unless he wants to.

For women, who have not yet been hardened by numerous broken promises, that have invested themselves emotionally into this relationship, **the idea of bringing up a child fathered by someone who has now rejected them is just torture.** Women instinctively need security in all its forms before embarking on motherhood. As stated earlier, pregnancy can be dangerous and extremely hazardous to both the mother and the prospective child. **When you add in the extreme emotional distress of a broken relationship,** that process just weakens the mother even more. So choosing to terminate the pregnancy has to

be the healthier option. Men, either through ignorance or just plain selfishness who don't understand the distress they've caused will carry that consequence with them into future relationships.

Intimidation, poverty and peer pressure has an obvious male influence that we do not need to elaborate on, instead we will go straight to health problems because this is where it gets very interesting. Have you ever noticed, those that have read the Bible, that almost all the instructions that God gives, He gives to men! **Some feminist groups are outraged by this and have sought to use a more gender-neutral pronoun to replace the masculine preference of scripture.** But they are proceeding from a false assumption. The Bible translators did not get it wrong. God knows that an obedient and righteous man can transform his family and bring life and health to his wife and children. Just as, a man given over to selfish and evil practises can utterly ruin his family and devastate his wife and children.

Miscarriage, foetal distress, sick and disabled children, **who normally gets the blame for that?** Even science is prejudiced in their search for the causes of these problems when they concentrate their investigation on the mother. The Bible points the finger in another direction: towards the man. At this point I'm going to present a challenge to the Scientific community regarding the source of genetic abnormality, and the challenge is this: All genetic abnormalities are passed onto the children through their fathers' sperm, NOT through the mothers' ovaries. Is that true? Let the biologists do their work and prove it for themselves.

The fact is, **the sins of the fathers are passed onto their children.** It affects up to 3 or 4 generations through that blood line. So, if you have a sick or disabled mother who is pregnant and whose life is at risk if she carries the baby to full term, **she is in that position because of a male influence.** If the foetus is found to be malformed, or distressed in some way that could cause great suffering to the child once its'

born, this again is down to a male influence; either from the man who fathered this child or from the father of the woman who is pregnant. Aborting a foetus in that condition is an act of mercy.

COMPASSIONATE LAWS

I acknowledge that the Pro-choice movement is a necessary counter-balance to the more extreme positions adopted by some elements of the Pro-lifers. **They are seeking to safeguard hard won freedoms that give women some element of choice** when it comes to self-determination over their lives and their bodies. But women have it within their power to use these freedoms for good or evil and my biggest concern is that **too many women are using these freedoms to mimic the worst excesses of male sexual behaviour**. That is a recipe for personal disaster. I hope that my female readers will review again the points raised in this chapter and choose to conduct themselves in a manner that would win the approval of the founder of the feminist movement and review the goals and aims that made them so successful.

For those engaged in the Pro-life, anti-abortion campaign, which is predominantly a Christian-based movement, **the message of your organisation has got to change**. Abortion has never been a causal event, it has always been a consequence of sexual sin. If you wish to prevent abortions in the future, you can only do that by preventing impregnation in the first place **and that means dealing with the men**. Yes it is much more difficult than going after vulnerable women and it will make you tremendously unpopular but it's the only course left open to you if you wish to make an effort to reduce abortions. One thing is for certain, **you cannot continue to use propaganda and dubious doctrines to prop up teachings** that have no basis in truth. If you continue to do that, you will alienate yourselves from the foundation of your faith and all your other activities will be rendered unfruitful. The last chapter of this book deals with the

consequences in greater detail and I would urge you to heed what is being said.

Before we leave the subject of abortion, it should be noted that enough has been revealed to answer ethical questions that, up to this point, many parts of the Christian Church have been wrestling with. The most contentious, to date, has been on the subject of embryonic stem cell research.

The embryology debate has been reduced to an ethical conflict of “cells versus souls” Should the Church engage in this debate? Absolutely, but not from the point of view currently proposed. **Biblically-based engagement would require the church to focus on why people get sick in the first place** and what is needed to make them well. However, if the World chooses not to respond to that message but rather continue to pursue the medical options available through scientific discovery, they should be allowed to get on with it. No human being is being killed in this process, no suffering is involved on the part of the foetal matter so there is no need to paint horrific pictures about an event that doesn't exist.

CHAPTER FOUR

The Horror of Being Eve

Every reader of this book has at least one female relative. What kind of future can she look forward to? Does this depend on the Country in which she lives, the type of family she grows up in, the time in World history in which she lives? Yes, all these things have an impact on her prospective future, but just how much control does she really have?

You see, we already know this is very much a mans' world and women's' lives are often dictated by the males in her circle of influence. For too many women those male influences can be ruinous to them. Behind every prostitute lies a fallen man, **behind every rape victim, drug addict and poverty-stricken woman there is a man who failed in his duty toward his wife, daughter, sister or mother.**

Mahatma Ghandi said that he was glad that he had neither been born a slave or a woman! He saw little to differentiate between them, especially in his own Country.

HATING WOMEN

Why is so much cruelty directed toward women by men? Religion often has an anti-female bias. In Islam, the people ruled by Sharia law

are subject to numerous restrictions but none more so than women. In a recent incident in Ethiopia, a British television crew filmed the execution of a woman that had been accused of adultery. Under Sharia law, the death penalty was mandatory. No evidence of guilt was presented and **there was no sign of the man with whom she was alleged to have had this affair.** But the method of execution was the most horrifying part. She was tied in a kneeling position to a wooden post. The executioner, with his face uncovered, was squatting down next to her and he had a knife with a small stiletto blade that he was casually pushing into her abdomen, chest, legs and genitals. He was clearly enjoying himself and anxious to drag this out for as long as possible. He was immune to her screams and kept his face inches from her own.

Of course this was nothing more than sadistic torture. Did this woman have any clue that her life was to end in such a brutal and vicious way when she lived years before this event? Probably not, but there are many other similar incidents every day.

In the Balkans conflict it was reported that the Serbian authorities released sadistic, dangerous men that had been imprisoned for crimes against their own people and let them loose on the citizens of Bosnia and Kosovo. **These men were given carte blanche to do whatever they wanted to men, women and children.** No one knows the full extent of all the horrors committed during this war. The agony, pain and suffering inflicted through sustained torture, rape and general brutality would sicken the most hardened of readers. The verified statements of some of these victims confirm the level of violence committed against them often over a period of months.

SEXUAL VIOLENCE

One of the consequences of rape is, of course, unwanted pregnancies. The husbands and fathers of the women and girls who fell pregnant

wanted nothing to do with this “evil” offspring and these women, already severely traumatised, **had no desire to add to their troubles by keeping these babies** so they left them to fend for themselves and many of them died of cold and malnutrition.

In the African Country of Rwanda in, April 1994, Hutu extremists began a terrible slaughter of their Tutsi neighbours. For 100 days they ruthlessly exterminated men, women and children with machetes and clubs in a genocidal act that cost the lives of over one million people. About two years after the madness ended, a BBC news crew were dispatched to the area specifically to find out what had happened to the Tutsi female survivors. This is just one of the accounts that the female reporter uncovered.

A young mother was fleeing her village with her 5 year old daughter along with many of her neighbours. Less than a mile from the village the Hutu militia caught up with them and the frenzy of violence that followed defied description. **Babies and toddlers were cut to pieces, women were raped and then genitally mutilated with spears.** The young mother escaped death, probably because of her natural beauty but not before she had been viciously gang-raped by at least a dozen men. **Several men also got hold of her 5 year old daughter and did the same to her.**

She lay unconscious until dawn, by that time her attackers had disappeared. She surveyed the scene of unspeakable carnage and in a deep state of shock, bleeding, badly injured, she began to walk shakily down the dusty road. As she did so, **she heard the plaintive cries of her injured daughter but she was totally numb unable to respond.** At that point, crying and calling for her mother the badly injured little girl staggered along behind her mother, her innocent world crushed and murdered by unspeakable savagery, unable to comprehend why her mother wasn't able to respond to her distress.

Before we go any further with this chapter and, for the sake of balance, we should stop and acknowledge that **not all men behave in such a depraved and violent way**. There are decent, honourable men out there across all nationalities, religions and race. **No one nation is evil, just as no one nation can be considered righteous**. It is individuals that make up a family, families that make a community and communities that make up a nation. All peoples and all nations are governed by laws as immutable as the law of gravity. **If you break that law, that law will break you**. These laws were not written by man, they have existed since the beginning of time. A lot of people think that the laws for success or failure in this life were given just to the ancient nation of Israel, that it applied only to them. But that just isn't true. **The law was REVEALED to the ancient nation of Israel** so that they could make a conscious choice to either live by those laws or defy them. A large part of the Old Testament is a record of their experiences **written as a witness to all the nations of the world**. The descendants of all 12 tribes of the ancient nation of Israel have a responsibility to that witness today. It doesn't just apply to the Jewish people in the modern state of Israel.

EXAMPLE, NOT SPEECHES

For Christians, the most important part of our lives is the witness we present to everybody else. Our lives should be governed by the teachings of Jesus Christ so that those who get to know us will see for themselves what God can do with a man or woman who is submitted to Him. Doing harm to others is just not in our remit, even when seriously provoked. Because as sinners we have been forgiven so much, we must be constantly ready to forgive one another and forgive those in the world who seek to harm us. In fact, we are required to go beyond that and actually pray for the blessing of our enemies. **Christians are not identified by wearing crosses or carrying Bibles**, they're identified by compassion, self-restraint, an inner sense of joy and peace, a refusal to think the worst of people, generosity, trustworthiness and kindness.

All those elements were missing in Rwanda, Bosnia and the thousands of other atrocities committed in human experience. **How hard does a heart have to be to engage in rape, torture or savage murder?** It didn't happen overnight. How many slights and offences went unforgiven? How many greedy and selfish decisions were taken by people of influence with little or no regard of the consequences to the ordinary people. **How many universal laws were broken?** I love that word Universe. We use that word to describe the whole creation of God. It comes from UNited and diVERSE. It celebrates the inter-relationship and harmony of everything created, as well as the variety, complexity and uniqueness of each part that contributes to the solidarity of the whole. **Make no mistake, until humanity learns to dwell with one another in that kind of unity, our domain will never extend beyond this Earth.** We need to learn to get it right here before we're allowed anywhere else.

As human beings we are so selfish, almost to our very core. As individuals we love personal praise, adulation, promotion, recognition and **yet we balk at the prospect of personal responsibility.** We play the blame game. The first and most dramatic encounter that any man or woman will ever have with God is the sudden realisation and acceptance of their personal part in human suffering. Every utterance of profanity, every broken promise, every lie told, every grudge that was held, every act of violence committed will and must be accounted for.

Misogynistic men tend to be attracted to religions that mandate that a woman must cover herself from head to foot to conceal her face and form; never giving heed to the fact that the sexual lust comes from within us. **But it is so much easier to blame the focus of our lust than deal with what is going on inside us.** We demand conformity to our will and throw acid in the faces of those we seek to control. Women throughout history have learned one thing about men: just how weak and helpless he really is and how brutal he will become to try and cover up his inadequacies.

THE WHIPPING GIRL

Women have been made the scapegoat for the weakness and failure of men since the very beginning. Their (women's) very perceptiveness challenges our ego. Their insight exposes our frailties and stupidity but **rather than confront our personal weaknesses, we seek to dominate the accuser.** We feel emasculated and that's why a 40 year old man will pay a dowry to the parents of a 7 year old girl and take her as his wife. She is effectively given away by her parents because they are enslaved to poverty and tradition. **Her misery will be compounded by the idea of using her as slave labour, working for no pay and suffering sexual abuse night after night with no end in sight.** Her "husband" forcing her to bear children in an undeveloped body causing terrible physical damage to her reproductive system, scarring and disabling her for life. **This authorised paedophilia, this rape of children under the guise of religious tradition, is man at his weakest.** His cowardice made manifest for all to see. What cowardice? His inability to engage in a lifelong relationship with a mature, intelligent, fully grown woman.

What other "horrors" do the daughters of Eve face? **How about subjugation and repression of their talent.** How many brilliant engineers, architects, artists, dancers, writers, actors, musicians, etc have lived and died without ever having been given the opportunity to train and develop the potential that lay within them? Instead their experience has been domestic drudgery; enslavement to the ideals of their husband, family, community or nation. **A flower that was never allowed to bloom, a song that was never heard, a light that never shone.** What a tragic indictment of our world. Here, in the West, we have attempted to introduce freedom of choice through our laws, our education systems and our social structures. Women can, and do, take advantage of these opportunities but though we have removed many of the physical constraints that prevented them from flourishing, the psychological and spiritual restraints are still there. A woman still has to deal with the issues of conscience just as much as any man.

MY SISTER, MY FRIEND

What about sisterhood? If women experience so many difficulties with their menfolk, shouldn't their relationships with one another be more caring and compassionate? You would think so but there is too much evidence to the contrary. **Women, for the most part, are more empathetic and more quick to forgive and change their views than men.** But they can also be spiteful, vindictive and treacherous especially with one another. Relationships matter to women. **What someone else thinks of them is very important to their sense of self-worth.** This is why it is so stupid for a man to claim that he loves his children, yet fails to love their mother. The wrath he is provoking in their mother will inevitably affect the safety and emotional stability of his children. **Men are the number one cause for friction between women.** Jealousy and rivalry over a man can ruin a lifelong friendship between two women whether they be sisters, mother and daughter-in-law, college pals, even a mother and her biological daughter. Sorry lads, it will always come back to us. What we think, say and do in our relationship with our mothers, sisters, wives, daughters and all other females dramatically affects their relationships with one another. As men, we need to be sensitive to that and be responsible.

Pick almost any religion you like and within its teachings you will find an anti-female bias. Many people, especially women, feel this is true of the Christian Church. It tends to centre around one crucial issue: Submission to the Man. Does the Bible teach on this issue? It most certainly does and **these teachings have been perverted beyond all recognition of what was originally intended.**

THE ROLE OF WOMEN

It's astonishing how many people confuse Tradition with Biblical Teaching. Forinstance, when we ask the question what is the role of

women in society? We will get a mixed response. Anything from: A woman's place is in the home, cooking, cleaning and raising children; to: a woman's place is to have total equality with men in the work place, pursuing any career path she desires. Is any of that true? These examples take us from one end of the spectrum to the other. Both examples may be relevant in Western nations but **in other nations of the world, women's choices are severely restricted**. But that still doesn't answer the question, what is a woman's primary role in society?

Okay, let's look at the Christian Church. If any place should be a bastion of freedom for women, it should be here. If any place should be able to make a clear distinction on the roles of men and women in society, it should be here. But instead, we find disagreement, polarisation of views and general confusion. The Bible is often quoted to back up a particular viewpoint that is already established. So instead of being led by the teachings, we end up imposing our personal interpretations on what's being taught.

So let's start at the beginning. There is no question that Man was created first. Next, the first Woman was taken out of man and **it was Man who made the first gender equality statement**: "This person is bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh, she shall be called Woman because she was taken out of Man." Subsequently, all other human beings have been born as a consequence of a man and a woman coming together in sexual congress which only has lawful application within marriage and mutual consent.

Then, one day, it all went pear-shaped. The enemy of both God and Man approached Eve and tricked and deceived her into doing something she was not supposed to do. She suggested to her husband: Adam that he do the same thing. He agreed. It was only when Adam followed her example that the "Fall" occurred. If he had done what he was supposed to do and taken a strong lead by insisting that they

consult with the Lord before doing anything, the “Fall” would never have happened. There were curses and consequences specifically directed at all men. All women would have to deal with the following, even today:

The five curses against every woman on the planet

Your sorrow will be greatly multiplied

Your conception will be greatly multiplied

In pain you shall bring forth children (birth pains)

Your desire shall be for your husband

Your husband will rule over you

You, the reader, may find this hard to believe but these 5 curses encapsulate with frightening accuracy all the pain, misery and suffering that has ever afflicted women that have lived in the past, are living now and will live in the future. Now let’s look at a couple of examples for each one:

Your sorrow will be greatly multiplied

For many girls, this begins at birth, the binding of the feet of baby girls to satisfy a warped concept of beauty was common in China and other Asian countries. Although largely banned in law, the practise can still be found among certain social groups who are still enslaved to traditional etiquette. The baby girl’s feet are tightly bound with bandages to prevent normal growth, this causes deformity and constant pain to the child which continues on into adulthood. It surely needs no further comment to imagine the distress and misery this creates for the entire lifetime of the child.

GENITAL MUTILATION

Practised predominantly in Middle eastern and African countries, female genital mutilation is imposed on prepubescent girls from ages

4 to 11. This “procedure” is normally carried out without anaesthetic, using filthy blunt knives, razor blades or pieces of glass. Their tiny victims are held down while a woman elder cuts and tears away the clitoris and labia and then the vagina is sewn up leaving only a small opening for urine and menstrual blood. Many girls do not survive this mutilation. They either die of shock at the time of the event or they develop life-threatening illnesses from blood poisoning or internal womb infections that will ultimately kill them. Those that do survive will suffer frequent abdominal pain, very painful periods, development of cysts and, in some cases, infertility.

It’s all done in the name of tradition. A superstitious fiction dreamt up by a seriously maladjusted individual who ignores reality and imposes his delusion on everybody else. These girls pay a terrible price for that level of ignorance. Another consequence of this action is to create alienation between mother and daughter, even though the mother is acting on the instruction of the girl’s father or elders of her village.

It is prevalent even in western nations where immigrants still practise this in violation of national laws but are not prevented or prosecuted because **law enforcers are afraid of being accused of religious or cultural insensitivity.**

Amnesty International estimates that over 130 million women worldwide have been affected by some form of FGM, with over 2 million procedures being performed every year. **That’s two million prepubescent girls held down and subjected to a horrific act** that will guarantee pain and misery for the rest of their lives. It is unimaginable especially to men. The nearest association that can be used from witness statements of the kind of pain involved is to have your teeth drilled down to the nerve without anaesthetic and the drilling continue in tooth after tooth until you pass out. It is torture and it is evil both in concept and practise.

The misery continues on into adulthood for these women because, even if they are fortunate enough to be married to a decent, compassionate man, every time they make love instead of pleasure and intimacy she will experience only pain and the humiliation of being unable to adequately respond to her husband's attentions. Some men, married to women who have undergone this procedure, have said that it is like making love to a solid plank of wood. Needless to say, these men are definitely not fans of this sadistic practise because it has robbed them of the intimacy that is supposed to be part of their relationship with their wife.

Cultural sensitivity is no excuse for western governments not to brand this practise for what it is: the most heinous and grotesque form of torture against little girls that there is. The last chapter of this book deals with the responsibilities that the Nations of Promise are supposed to uphold. Their unwillingness to condemn, without equivocation, this barbaric practise is just one of the many judgments that will stand against them.

Girls and women that have been subjected to this procedure can receive medical treatment to ease the worst effects. Those that have been rescued through the Church can be healed completely by those empowered to instruct and release them.

Your conception will be greatly multiplied

Hang on a minute. That's not a curse surely? Don't women like having children? Don't they rejoice when they find out they're pregnant? Yes to all the above, so why was this statement included as a curse upon all women? What was God referring to?

He was referring to the fact that women would have no control whatsoever over how or when they would get pregnant. As before, look at the history of women from all civilisations. Look at the plight of

the vast majority of women in the world today. **They don't control conception!**

In Western nations we have developed artificial means of birth control that at least give women some sense of control over how many children they produce in their lifetime. But most women in the world still don't have access to birth control and are still very much under this curse.

I can almost hear some of my readers saying, "Doesn't the Bible teach against birth control?" Actually, it doesn't. Some parts of the Christian Church will scream that it does but they're referring to religious dogma that is man-made. **This dogma is a reinforcement of that curse.** They don't appear to realise it but they are advocating a teaching that celebrates a curse rather than a blessing that has hoodwinked hundreds of millions of people.

This curse strikes in two ways. Millions of couples around the world are seeking to have children who can't. They're infertile. They are ready, they want to have children, they have set up their lives in preparation for this event but they cannot conceive. This brings anxiety, misery and a sense of failure especially on the part of the prospective mother. That illustrates one side of the curse. It is also the only side that you will ever get to hear about.

DIVINE CONTRACEPTION

The other side are those who can conceive at the drop of a hat. If this woman is willing and happy to have child after child then that's fine. But if she doesn't then her lack of control over the event is painfully highlighted. Intercourse, necessary for conception to occur, is not always voluntarily engaged in by the woman. She can be forced, coerced, tricked, manipulated, raped, be a victim of incest, child abuse, you name it **and then pregnancy results from that act. So**

her misery is compounded, her life choices crushed. Even women in strong, stable relationships are not looking to be baby-making machines. Most want to enjoy the attentions of their husband without worrying about becoming pregnant again.

Women in the West can, for the most part, artificially control conception. However, it must be stressed that all these means are artificial and they frequently come with unpleasant side effects. There is also something called the, “rhythm method” more commonly referred to as **pregnancy roulette**. In other words, there is no guarantee. These are all ingenious methods created by man to try and get round the curse without actually dealing with the source of the curse.

When did you last hear a preacher stand up and say to women that if they wanted to be set free from the curses imposed upon them they would need to go directly to God and follow His specific instructions? Well they can't preach what they don't believe or understand themselves **because a lot of preachers and teachers are still wedded to the superstitious ideals of religion** and they put those ahead of the Bible. A woman set free from this particular curse would never need to use artificial contraception again. She simply asks for a baby when she's ready for one. This is obviously done in agreement with her husband and the planned pregnancy is set in motion which, conveniently, brings us to the next curse.

In pain you shall bring forth children

I am in complete awe of women who have gone through this process of giving birth and have no idea what women actually feel. So I asked one woman what it felt like and I cannot repeat her language but for my male readers this is a snapshot of what she told me: “Imagine your testicles in the grip of an iron vice that is slowly being squeezed, now add the pain of trapped gas and combine that with trying to defecate a full-sized melon; times that by a hundred and

you'll have some idea of what we go through; now, can I get you a cup of coffee?"

As I said, I have no idea how you women do it. The American, British and European medical associations all describe the pains of birth as being completely normal or natural. **None of them describe it as a curse, until you go abroad to third world countries** who don't have trained obstetricians and that elixir of pregnant women everywhere known as the epidural. For them, giving birth is an absolutely terrifying prospect.

Half a million women around the world will not survive childbirth this year. Countless millions more will have lifelong disabilities as a consequence of complications during pregnancy or the birth itself. The curse is real, the pain is real, the threat is real.

How many of my female readers have heard of the campaign for natural childbirth? Their contention is that the more painful the experience, the more a mother will want to bond with her child. This position is ridiculed by biologists who actually know how the bonding process works and it's thoroughly excoriated by women who have experienced the real-life trauma of giving birth. And, I absolutely assure you, **there is no Biblical foundation for such a ludicrous and ill-informed position.** Any woman who wants to make use of highly skilled obstetricians, Caesarian sections or epidurals should do so without being made to feel guilty.

Christian women who are contemplating pregnancy will be pleased to hear that there is a very specific instruction in the Bible that assures them of a relatively pain-free birth, where this curse is specifically lifted. Have you been taught that? Are you aware of that? Are all my other readers aware of this? As with the subject of conception, the answer is probably No! And, even if you are aware of what I'm referring to, you will probably have heard all kinds of twisted explanations

as to why this is not true and where do these explanations come from? You already know the answer!!

Your desire shall be for your husband

We have already covered part of this in an earlier chapter. But let's call a spade a spade. **This is idolatry pure and simple.** Exchanging worship of God for the worship of a man. Some of my female readers will be infuriated by this comparison and indignantly proclaim that they have **never** worshipped their husbands. Well let's test that response:

If you feel threatened, who do you turn to for protection?

If you feel hungry, who do you turn to for food?

If you have had a strongly-felt conviction, who did you give that up for?

If you are oppressed by your husband, who do you turn to for justice or do you just knuckle under and submit to fear?

How many friends, family members, personal dreams and liberties have you given up just to be with your husband?

If you think I just pulled these questions out of my hat, you'd be wrong. **These are precisely the kind of questions asked by God about our relationship to Him?** He is able to determine who and what we worship by the answers we honestly provide to those questions.

This part of the curse on all women is like blindness. Most women think like this, most women do all the same things. It has never occurred to most women that there is a fundamental problem to their way of thinking. Which brings us to the last curse:

Your husband will rule over you

I have said this before about the feminist movement: Their movement was designed to bring women out of slavery but **they couldn't take the slave out of women.** That requires a supernatural event which will revoke the curse.

What about Christian women, haven't they been released from this curse? I wish I could say yes but the truth is many haven't been, mainly because they have not been taught properly.

In many cases, Christian women have exchanged one form of slavery for another and, once again, it comes in two parts: The first relates to women who see their new-found freedom as a catalyst to release all their pent-up frustrations in a frenzy of activity that refuses to embrace any acknowledgement of men in a leadership role. They revel in their freedom and are unwilling to accept that the covenant (or agreement), that has made this possible, has conditions built-in that they must adhere to if they want to experience real freedom and success.

Inevitably, a lot of these conditions relate to their conduct in marriage and, for a lot of Christian women who have experienced abuse or neglect, this has nothing but negative connotations. **There is also confusion over the role of women in leadership in the Church.** One high-profile example is the TV evangelist Joyce Meyer who is often criticised for taking on a role that is supposed to be exclusively reserved for men. It is true that she has a very prominent ministry that reaches millions of people but her role, when it's contained, does not breach New Covenant guidelines. Which, in her case, is very specific; that the older women must teach the younger women how to conduct themselves in life and in marriage and her discourse, for the most part, does not depart from this. However, **the public teaching of men which will inevitably involve rebuke, reproof and correction should not be undertaken by a woman** for reasons too numerous

to mention. That is not to say that men can't learn a great deal from women on a whole variety of issues but there is a time and place for that to be done.

Which brings us to the dreaded S word: Submission. Oh yes. I can see the image that is already being conjured up in the minds of some of my readers. Some muscle-bound behemoth, clad in leather, wielding a whip, standing over some poor woman helplessly cowering on the floor. Is that submission? No, that is domination, that is bullying, that is cowardly and obnoxious. Godly submission, in this context, is where a woman WILLINGLY, of her own volition, with full knowledge, **submits herself to God** by obeying **His** command to submit to the leadership of her husband.

Now this next part is crucially important, so please read this very carefully. Her husband, **if he is a Christian**, will already have in his possession three articles that he can purchase from any good hardware store. That is: a plastic bowl, a bar of soap and a towel, oh and he will need some water. **His conduct toward his wife, in their marriage, will be judged on how he makes use of these articles.** Any man or woman who knows their Bible will know exactly what I'm talking about. To everyone else, let me describe it this way: If you have to submit to someone, isn't it a wonderful thing to submit to someone who is dedicated to serving you?

Submission to a man like this would be pleasant, endearing and quite easy to do for most women but what about those occasions when he's not quite living up to those perfect standards. Is submission still required? Does her obedience **to God**, in this matter, bring her approval and blessings from God? Yes, it does. Because even if her husband takes advantage of her obedience and uses her submission to lord it over her, **her welfare and her happiness are not dependant on his reactions**, they are gifted to her by the One she is truly serving. So her husband is no longer ruling over her, she is

now a Princess in the Household of God where **all women** rightfully belong.

What about Christian women who have traded their new-found faith and relationship with God for marital worship? Again, this is down to wrong teaching and misunderstanding of the Christian woman's role in marriage. **These women have adopted a thoroughly warped idea of what submission is supposed to be.** Their husband is **not** the god of their home or their marriage. He does **not** occupy God's place in her life. Her husband is under authority himself and will be held fully accountable for his conduct in marriage.

BECOMING THE IDEAL MAN

A man must lead by consent, not by imposition. **He must lead by example.** He must **demonstrate** submission and humility to his wife and family. He must be a man of his word and never make a promise he cannot keep. **He should seek his wife's input, unique perspective and wisdom** regarding any matter that jointly affects their lives. He must exercise self control and **never** use physical or psychological intimidation to force compliance to his wishes. I reiterate: he does not sit in the place of God in the home. He should be his wife's best friend, a tender, compassionate lover, a fierce defender of her honour. He should rejoice in his role under God as provider and defender of his wife and family. To safeguard the welfare of his wife and children **he should, at all times, remember his Biblically-ordained priorities:** God first, wife second, children third, work and everything else fourth, et al.

It is true that some women **prefer** to be with a man who is in control, who makes all the decisions and imposes his will on the household. The trouble is, in these circumstances, **she would find that her mood and temperament are also being governed by how he feels at the time** and this would eventually breed resentment that would never

be allowed free expression. So it's internalised which leads to massive psychological and physical health problems. **Some men even teach that this is the way a woman is supposed to be.** Religious teaching, especially, has a tendency to support this view; but, a woman in this condition is not fulfilling her God-ordained role. She is still, well and truly, under the curse of Eve.

She hasn't experienced liberty. She constantly worries and is fearful. **Even her relationship with God is based not on love and thankfulness but on fear and self-loathing.** This dangerous and unhealthy choice of living probably stems from her childhood experiences: a domineering, violent father who probably indoctrinated her with the illusion that everything he did was God-ordained. So her view of God is seen through a prism of threat, fear and judgement. She may see herself as a Christian in a Christian marriage but she lives under constant self-condemnation with a husband who reinforces that state by his conduct toward her.

A man like that objectifies his wife. She is not his wife but an appendage who exists for him, much like his car. Her individuality does not have free expression. **Her free will is stifled.** The uniqueness of her personality cannot flourish in that kind of relationship. He doesn't recognise her gifts and talents, nor does he encourage her development of them. Her thoughts and feelings that she is supposed to be able to freely share with her husband are internalised and any hope of true intimacy is lost with it. Let's be clear: **This is not a marriage.** This isn't what God had in mind when He created marriage. Both the husband and wife are LOST in a relationship like this and a major radical change will be needed to fix it.

All women are pre-destined to seek out success in **all** their relationships. Not just in marriage but with parents, siblings, their children, their extended families and their friends. For women this is a major priority in their lives. **It really is key to her happiness and wellbeing.**

Men can and should play a key part in this. We should always be seeking to facilitate this by being the husbands, fathers, sons and brothers that women most need.

If women want to adopt the successful principles for great relationships: their priorities have to match those that God set out for men: **God first, husband second, children third, then everyone else.** Then life will be less of a horror and much more idyllic.

CHAPTER FIVE

Homophobia and the Church

Talk about a sudden change of subject. Why am I addressing an issue that seemingly has nothing to do with Pro-life matters? Because the Christian Church, for the most part, has veered way off course in its approach to this subject. It has even created splits within the Church and brought about doctrinal imbalance that has effectively isolated our position from day to day reality. The same thing has happened with abortion and end-of-life issues. **It's all the same problem: deviating from the original meaning and intent of Bible teaching has made our position look extreme, uninformed and irrelevant to the rest of society.**

So how did it happen? How on earth did the Christian Church end up in such a mess over the issue of homosexuality?

The answer is quite easy to find and it all boils down to fear and misunderstanding. Any Christian who knows his Bible will be aware of the **story of Sodom and Gomorrah.**

In this story it is clearly stated that the inhabitants of the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah had been completely overcome by every form of depravity and violence known to man. It is reasonable to assume that **the sexual violence alluded to in this story** was directed at men,

women and children and, in all probability, toward animals as well. These people had lost all sense of self control. So, was homosexuality practised within these two cities? Undoubtedly it was, **but it was just one of many offences** against God's law and the Biblically-stated penalty for all these forms of behaviour was death.

God had pronounced judgement on these two cities but, before this was carried out, two angels, in the form of men, were despatched to the city of Sodom to rescue one family out of all the inhabitants in there. As they approached the house of that family they suddenly found themselves surrounded by men of all ages. Men, both old and young, **grabbed the two angels with the intent of doing all manner of depraved acts with them and against their will.** Obviously they did not succeed and were struck with blindness and both cities, once the family had been removed, were blasted out of existence by some kind of meteor shower.

This story is often referred to when the Church wishes to refute claims by the gay community that their "lifestyle" is legitimate. The term sodomy is derived from the name of one of the cities destroyed in the above story. The claim is made that any nation that tolerates homosexuality within its borders will suffer the same fate, but is that true?

Historically, the answer seems to be No! **We have to accept that homosexuality is not a modern phenomenon.** It has existed in various forms for as long as men have been on this planet. For some it has been life-long relationships whereas others have just dabbled in it. It has been practised, to one degree or another, in every nation on Earth. Some nations ban the practise in their laws but it still goes on, albeit covertly. **It is only recently that Western nations have chosen to legitimise the practise by removing the criminal sanctions from the law.** Some campaigners are looking to go further by seeking complete endorsement of this practise by promoting same sex marriage. Their argument is that governments have no right to discriminate against

same sex couples by denying them benefits normally associated with heterosexual marriage.

GAY LAW

Why push these boundaries? Why doesn't the gay community settle for the freedoms they've already won and leave it at that? Because the public perception, in general, still believes that the homosexual lifestyle is wrong. **The longed-for "social inclusion" has still not yet been achieved.** This is a battle for the hearts and minds of ordinary people everywhere and it must be fought before the cameras and the mikes of the world media and the Church has become an unwilling accomplice to all this.

When deciding what laws they should or shouldn't change, **most Governments are primarily concerned with promoting peace and harmony in a society that they know is seriously flawed.** They are aware of the worst excesses of human nature and the violence that can stem from that. In any democracy there will always be trade-offs and compromise. Most of the post-war years were spent seeking to stave off armageddon between the Soviet bloc and the West. The policy that was adopted was M.A.D. or Mutually Assured Destruction. Neither side dared to initiate armed conflict for fear that it would escalate to all-out nuclear war. **This same policy now underscores the premise on which all treaties and world trade agreements are negotiated.** If one nation begins to make trouble, we cut off their oil supply. If we step outside of globally agreed boundaries, our grain imports are shut off. This interdependence has been artificially contrived to promote compliance toward the ultimate goal of world peace.

What on earth has all this got to do with homosexuality? Well nothing directly but we have to understand the zeitgeist of this generation. **They feel that entrenched attitudes and positions have to be loosened.** That old certainties have to be undermined. That it's necessary

to blur the distinctions between right and wrong. Once that is done and all the old certainties have been stripped away, we are left with an anxious population, highly susceptible to suggestion. This creates a vacuum for authoritative leadership that can set an agenda that, up until just a couple of decades ago, would have been unthinkable.

We haven't quite reached that point yet but we are well on our way. Unfortunately, the Christian Church has been wrong-footed by the speed of world events, scientific discovery and technological advances. Poor doctrine has been found out and now we're seen as irrelevant and out-of-touch.

The enemy of both God and Man has set the agenda. Keep them busy!! But keep them busy doing those things which ultimately achieve nothing. Set one group against another and let them fight it out while the world hurtles on toward its own destruction. It's the oldest trick in the book, it's such a shame that it's worked so well on the Church.

SIN DISCRIMINATION

Whenever the Christian Church is asked to make a judgement about the so-called gay lifestyle, we will point to scriptures that indicate God's total disapproval against such practises. Do these scriptures exist? Of course they do, but so do many others: **every form of human sin is roundly condemned.** Anything from lying to stealing, idolatry, fornication, adultery and any and every form of injustice that subjugates our fellow man; which means **we are all guilty of some or all of these things.** In other words, condemnation on mankind is pretty much universal.

So, is the Church allowed to practise sin discrimination? Can we pick on one section of society more so than on another? Is condemnation truly universal or is it selective? **The bible plainly states that all have**

sinned and all are subject to the penalty of death. Remember, in this context we are referring to **living death** or, the ongoing consequences of lawlessness that are manifested in every form of physical and social ills known to man. The Church must stick to this broad focus and Not single out any one group as being worse than another.

Sexual sin is broadly defined as any imaginative thought or physical act that contravenes the Biblical definition of love between husband and wife. There can be a man who has been married to the same woman for 50 years and never touched another woman. But if he has ever looked at another woman and fantasised about her, **he is as guilty of adultery as the man who does it physically.** Some might argue, "Well, if I've fantasised about it and I'm guilty, I might as well do it literally". True, but then your condemnation escalates to another level and dramatically increases your exposure to even greater dangers, one of which is STDs. **Sexual sin always brings consequences now, in this lifetime,** but the world's response is always to try and deal with the effects of sin rather than the cause. As fast as we get one sexually transmitted disease under control, a newer, deadlier form arrives on the scene.

Back in the 1980s, a new form of disease was diagnosed that came to be called: Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome or AIDS. It was predominantly found among those who were actively engaged in homosexuality. Immediately it was labelled as "The Gay Plague" by the media. Some parts of the Church jumped on board, **triumphantly asserting that God's judgement had finally come onto the gay community.** Well that statement was soon confounded when, within months of that kind of proclamation being made, cases began appearing among heterosexuals including women.

A few years later, the gay plague label had been removed and HIV AIDS was officially re-classified as yet another sexually transmitted disease (STD). The scientific community got to work and produced a

retro-viral drug regimen that could slow the progress of the disease and deal with the worst effects. **A permanent cure is still to be found** but, in the meantime, AIDS has joined Gonorrhoea, herpes, chlamydia, syphilis and Hepatitis B, along with a host of other ills, that afflict and cause misery to many members of society affected by sexual sin.

AN OUTING IN PUBLIC

What about homosexuals themselves, how do they conduct themselves in civil society? Well, they certainly occupy some prominent roles. Mostly, in media, the movie business, stage and theatre, politics, fashion, pop music, big business and, more recently, sports and even the Church. **Some have even suggested that if you want to be successful, be gay!** Obviously that's complete nonsense but large corporations are now designing more and more of their marketing to appeal to the so-called Pink Economy.

Some believe that the "outing" of so many prominent social figures began with the exposure of Rock Hudson in 1985. Generally regarded as a leading ladies man, **Rock Hudson epitomised the qualities of wholesome manliness that other men should aspire to.** He took the lead role in many movies and TV dramas throughout the 60s and 70s. So when the public were first informed that this icon of masculinity was dying of an AIDS related illness and had been sexually active with other men, the response was shock. There was also anger. Anger because the public felt they had been duped. Women had loved him, men had admired him. They felt let down and betrayed.

Not long after, a famous British rock musician Freddie Mercury died of AIDS in November of 1991. He had also been sexually active with other men and, once again, there was shock and outrage only, **this time, the criticism came from other gay groups.** They were annoyed that he had not been more open about his gay orientation and the state of his health. They felt that had he been more outspoken, he

could have used his fame to promote AIDS awareness and other gay-related issues.

It is interesting to note that in the space of only six years, the public response to the AIDS crisis and, by extension, the openness of the gay movement had undergone a total transformation. **Shame and indignation had now been replaced by audacity and sympathy.**

Today, there isn't any part of society, in the West, that hasn't been affected by this. Acceptance in the media, the arts, politics and the law is well established. However, **there has been a backlash which suggests there are limits as to how far the gay agenda can be pushed. Heterosexual men do have a problem with this.** The vast majority are not outspoken but they are reacting. At the most extreme end, there are still incidents of gay bashing (violent assaults on openly gay males). But **there is a more subtle response and it affects the majority.** We're talking about male bonding, that strength of friendship that is akin to brotherhood. It happens with fathers and sons, men who work together and socialise together. The camaraderie that exists at times of crisis and brings men together for a common cause. That is being undermined by fear and suspicion that if our friendship is seen as too close, we will be labelled as homosexuals.

OVER COMPENSATING?

Gay groups dismiss this as redneck rhetoric but it's no theory and it can't be legislated away. There is another reaction that has **serious implications for women.** Heterosexual men, in a desperate attempt to distance themselves from any association with gay affiliation, **will exaggerate their masculine identity by sexual conquest.** Each new notch on the bed post will be further evidence of how straight he is. Is this normal? The reaction may be understandable to heterosexual men but there is nothing "normal" about it. Their behaviour is dangerous and reckless. Couple that with the breakdown in male bonding

and we have a self-perpetuating cycle that is utterly destructive to the strongest unit of social cohesion; the family.

For those who choose to follow the gay lifestyle, there has to be social etiquette. **Openly flaunting any sexual activity is provocative** because it can create envy, jealousy, disgust, even violence. There is wisdom in restraint and good manners in being discreet.

SOCIAL INCLUSION

One such positive example was displayed to the general public through one of the most popular types of programming on Western television: a reality show called "Wife Swap". This programme features a format where two wives exchange husbands and families for a period of two weeks. In the first week the new wife must follow the same order of doing things as the wife she replaced. In the second week she gets to impose her own rules on her adopted family. The producers invariably choose two families who are polar opposites of each other which paves the way for potential conflict and gripping viewing.

In one such episode, a gay couple were twinned with a Christian couple. They both had children and neither had any kind of history of associating with one another, so the potential for conflict was explosive. As it turned out, apart from a few awkward moments, **both couples acquitted themselves with dignity, respect and kindness.** The two men who were living together had set demarcation lines for their respective roles and were doing a pretty good job of raising their children. As well as, if not better, than many heterosexual families. The Christian couple were more strict but their maturity and responsible examples were also holding the children in good stead.

Of course, there were weaknesses in both camps but in the end, both families because of the way that they chose to relate to one another,

benefited enormously from the experience. From this point on the Christian couple were going to be **less inclined to adopt the stereotypical approach** toward their gay neighbours and the gay couple now felt more comfortable around Christian people because of the positive, non-judgemental attitude adopted by this Christian family.

So where does an experience like this leave the Church? If a gay couple can raise children in a happy, well-adjusted, disciplined atmosphere that causes these children to thrive, **how can we deny them adoption rights?** Or how can the Church say that a family comprising a mother and a father are the ideal parenting mix, when a quick call to your local social services will show that some of the worst examples of abuse and neglect can be found in heterosexual families? Even among some Christian families!!

If there's one thing that people hate more than anything else, it's hypocrisy. The pro-marriage, pro-family lobby can be seen marching, holding rallies decrying the influence of the homosexual agenda on their schools and communities but what's going on beneath the surface? **Just how secure is this heterosexual ideal?**

Every Christian couple has an obligation to demonstrate the ideals of a Christian marriage and that's done by living out this ideal day by day **as a witness to everyone else**. The laws that govern marital conduct are as immutable as the law of gravity, these laws are NOT man-made. **If these laws are broken or ignored, the marriage will fail**. The same applies to the raising of children. Children cannot be successfully raised without a sterling example being set by both parents in every area of life, especially the example that is supposed to be set by the father.

The Church is often quoted as bemoaning the loss of the marital and family institution, that we are under attack by Government policies and social engineering but what prompts these changes in our civil

life? **Isn't it the human quest to try and find a better way of doing things**, to be more inclusive, to generate better social harmony? Do you remember how we used to treat divorced people or single girls who got pregnant? Remember when "queer" bashing was a national sport or when ostracising a single mother was deemed to be the correct thing to do?

There was a correct and proper way for the Church to respond to all these issues but a large part of the Church was not doing that, so, **those with a social conscience stepped in and did it for us.**

Am I being touchy-feely about this? No, I'm simply comparing and contrasting the behaviour of the Church on these matters against the advice and instruction that comes from scripture. **The fact that there is such a divide between what scripture teaches and what we actually do** leads me and others to conclude that the Church has taken a wrong position on a whole variety of different issues and that position needs to be corrected.

SPANKING THE CHURCH

Sometimes, society will take a position on an issue that puts them in direct conflict with scriptural teaching. In the event that that happens, the Church will want to defend the teaching of scripture on that subject but then one, or all, of three things will happen. The relevant doctrine is found to be poorly constructed and can't stand up to outside scrutiny. Or, the church itself is divided on that issue and won't support a united front. Or, the practise of that doctrine is either taken to excess or completely ignored. **Any one of these positions produces a poor example and an unbalanced life.** A fairly recent example of this was on the subject of child discipline.

Most Western governments have concluded that restrictions should be imposed on parents and teachers who would normally discipline

their children through the use of corporal punishment. Psychologists have suggested that this practise is harmful and could cause both permanent physical and psychological damage to the child and that **this practise could easily go from being corrective to abusive**. Is this true? There's a boat-load of anecdotal evidence that suggests that it is. A quick review of cases dealt with by the Social Services in any Country backs this up.

However, when we contrast that against the actual experiences of many people (50 years and older), we find that their childhood experiences were largely positive. **Yes, they were subjected to corporal punishment from time to time but it was a rare occurrence**, reserved mostly for blatant acts of disobedience. Was it always effective? No! Why? Because the discipline was not always matched by positive reinforcement for good behaviour. Or, the parents were divided and undermined each other. Or, **there was a lack of good example**, a case of; "Do what I say", rather than, "Do as I do". Or, the discipline was enacted when the remonstrative parent was totally out of control or under the influence of alcohol or drugs.

In ideal circumstances, corporal punishment of children should make up substantially less than one percent of their whole-life experience. For those who endured more than this, it could be safely said that that parent/child relationship had become abusive. Some punishments were excessive bordering on torture or they were applied for the most innocent of offences.

When these laws were first being proposed, the Church was ill-prepared to defend the use of corporal punishment because the Church itself was heavily divided on this and many other issues. **The Church allowed itself to be boxed in on a very narrow agenda** because the broad scope of parenting skills were not being uniformly taught and there were many Christian parents who were themselves very unbalanced in the raising of their children. Poor

teaching, coupled with poor example, meant the debate was lost before it began.

This is currently true of all the issues being raised in this book. When the “gay community” actively pursues legal parity with heterosexual marriage so that their partnerships achieve social recognition, **they are doing so because they feel like they are under attack.** Every time the Church responds by conducting or endorsing so-called “pro-family” demonstrations or leafleting the gay pride parade or are seen ranting from the pulpit, we perpetuate the conflict and attitudes on both sides become further entrenched.

WHY HARRY LIKES BARRY

But why does homosexuality exist at all? Why is it that one man feels sexually attracted to another man? Is it genetic?

Well let’s be scientific about this. From a strictly biological viewpoint the natural world, both plants and animals, have a male/female dynamic that is indisputable. There are minor variations of course but, by and large, the natural world fully endorses male/female interaction. But that is all to do with reproduction. Obviously, two men having sex cannot produce a child, but, **the vast majority of sexual interactions between men and women don’t produce children either.** Instead, that interaction is seen as an intimate expression of love and mutual desire.

Again, staying with the biological theme, we know that men and women have compatible body parts. Our bodies are literally designed to interact with each other, but that just isn’t the case with two men or two women. **Sex is only possible through artificial stimulation or unnatural use of other body parts.** Of course, many would argue that there are plenty of heterosexual couples who engage in that kind of activity as well.

So if we rule out biological necessity as the primary motivation for same-sex relationships, we're left with emotions or feelings, imaginations and desire. But those are all constituent parts of relationships between heterosexual couples. **So what is desire and where does it come from?** Why does one man look upon a particular woman and find her highly desirable while other men show no particular interest? Just what is the attraction? If we can answer that question, we can apply that answer to the reason why one man can look at another man and find him highly desirable. There is something within us (all of us) that is responding to a stimulus that is NOT biological, it's something else. In fact, it isn't even physical!!!!

Earlier in this book, I told you that the Bible reveals that all human beings are tri-part beings, that is: 3 in 1 or, TRINITY BEINGS! Our Creator is often described by the Church as a Trinity God or, 3 beings in 1: God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. Since the Bible describes all human beings as being made in the image of God, **we should not be surprised to find out that we are Trinity beings as well.** Namely, Body, Soul and Spirit. Our primary motivations or, the seat of our emotions emanate from our spirit. BUT, the Bible teaches us about two primary influences in this world that directly connects with our spirit. One is evil, the other is good. The good comes from our Spiritual Father, the evil influence comes from our (Mankind's) enemy: the devil or, the tempter or, the deceiver. **These two influences are constantly striving against one another and the battle ground is the human mind!!**

So, as a human being, wouldn't it be a good idea to know how temptation works? If you breathe, you'll be tempted, simple as that. So let's look at one example of temptation that many men can relate to, especially when it comes to sex. **Let's take a look at pornography, not literally, just as an example.** We all know that the internet is now the biggest host of pornography above and beyond all other types of media.

Let us suppose our subject male begins viewing some soft porn images. Initially, he may be aroused by what he sees but he quickly tires of all the artificial moaning and groaning. So what does he do next? Well obviously he quickly moves to the more romantic Mills and Boon website where he can view stories of true romance and gentlemanly behaviour . . . **Nah! I don't think so.** Temptation doesn't work that way. Instead, he will navigate to more sexually explicit sites and swiftly reach for his credit card. It isn't long before obsession takes hold. Now he is becoming more discriminating about the type of sexual activity he feels drawn to. This could be incest, homosexuality, sado-masochism, bestiality, even child porn.

If he continues unchecked, his appetites will automatically gravitate towards ever more violent and depraved images. Before long, he will no longer be satisfied with just being a voyeur or passive observer. **Now, the desire to act out those fantasies will consume his every waking moment.** He will seek out on-line dating sites that cater for like-minded individuals or, he will find a willing/unwilling partner on which to practise his newly awakened passions. **There is no love involved, no self sacrifice, just unadulterated, unrestrained lust.** Gangmasters in Eastern European Countries and many parts of Asia are scrambling to get enough women and children together to feed the growing appetites of the West. Those they can't buy from parents, they kidnap. Their young lives debauched and ruined, why? Because, **here in the West, we're losing all sense of self control.** Our society is busy removing personal accountability and, as a people, we are forgetting the crucial lesson of the personal responsibility that we have toward others.

Be warned, this is powerful stuff, **as potent as witchcraft and every bit as devastating.** So how far have we fallen? How far has our present generation succumbed to temptation? Well, check out the internet sites of Bebo, Facebook and Youtube. **We have raised an entire generation**

that has cast off restraint and our children are going to pay a terrible price for our lack of moral certitude.

Of course, temptation is everywhere but it has no power over us unless we freely choose to indulge it. But once we do we are well on the way to personal destruction and we'll take all our loved ones with us. **We cannot flirt or play games with this kind of thing because it really can take us over** (the Bible calls that demonic possession, which simply means that we no longer fight temptation but freely indulge it at every turn, at whatever cost to ourselves or others). We then become unreachable, unresponsive to counselling or any form of rehabilitation. Where do you think atrocities come from, or unimaginable cruelties inflicted on others? The Bible is clear that such people need to be executed, not for punishment because in their state they'll be unresponsive to punishment, but for the safety and wellbeing of society and to send a strong warning to any one thinking of going down the same road.

So where are you on this path? Here's a little test. Go off by yourself, somewhere where there are no distractions and no other people. Then, **just let let your mind wander and note what images and thoughts come into your mind**. Are they creative and positive selfless thoughts? Or, are they self-indulgent, lustful, power-mad, hateful thoughts? It's a rare individual who isn't dealing with stuff like that.

Attraction should always be examined by testing its limits. For instance, if I find a woman desirable I have to ask myself, will I marry her, can I imagine our lives together 20 years from now? If I can do that, then a relationship is worth pursuing. If not, I shouldn't be anywhere near her.

Similar questions should be asked by a man who feels drawn to another man. **If its lust then he shouldn't lie to himself**, instead he should realise that if he chooses to act upon it, there will be

consequences now, in this lifetime, and not just to him but also to the object of his desire.

SHEILA LIKES SOPHIE, SO?

There is another confusing aspect to homosexuality that is hardly ever discussed and yet distorts the whole concept of the so-called gay lifestyle. The gender question!!

Male homosexuality is clearly understood and clearly defined but what about lesbians?

Beyond traditional MALE fantasies, is there actually any such thing as a lesbian? Some commentators define lesbians as having a strong, almost butch quality to their personality. Others define lesbians as women who are sexually attracted to one another. Well let's debunk that straight away, **women are not even sexually attracted to men, let alone each other.** Women are not driven hormonally the way men are. Men lust, women crave companionship. They respond to kindness, gentleness and affection and especially attention. They're supposed to get that from their parents and then from their husbands. However, if they haven't seen a positive role model in their father (and most haven't) they will respond to anyone who they think will provide them with what they need. **If that attention comes from another woman then a relationship will develop** which may include some sexual contact, but they will never stop secretly desiring a husband.

Let's face it women find it hard enough working together never mind being in the kind of full-on relationship that they're supposed to be having with a man. Then there is physical closeness. **There is an intimacy that exists between all women that you will rarely find between men** because we're just not wired that way. Perfectly straight women think absolutely nothing of kissing and hugging one another without a seconds thought. Why? Because they're maternal, they

breast-feed boys AND girls, **they bathe nurture, feed and comfort both sexes, they're not male they are FEMALE.**

So where does this idea of lesbianism come from? Men!!! You know I did a little research into the pornographic side of this subject and I wasn't the least bit surprised by what I found. Without exception, every so-called lesbian website and movie was designed by men for men. Even where there were women directors, they slanted the physical action toward the appetites of men. **Well if women don't like it, why do they do it?** Drug and alcohol inducement, financial need, threats and intimidation, you name it.

Some women will voluntarily make out with one another not because they feel any kind of special attraction but **because they know it will excite the man** that's with them or the men who may end up watching. Why do women do this? Because it gets them attention.

What about the so-called butch women referred to earlier? This is a classic manifestation of defensive behaviour, much like a much-bullied wimpy boy who grows up to become a weight-lifter or a boxer. It's the standard: "No one's going to mess with me or the people I care about," syndrome. **These women will engage in relationships with other women mainly from the desire to protect them from the real and perceived dangers of predatory men.** So why do these so-called lesbians collaborate with homosexual men? Why do they go on political rallies and rail against conservative and religious constraints? Because **they're hard-wired to a supportive role toward men**, in this case, homosexual men. These women feel safe among these men as they're deemed to be less threatening than their straight counterparts. So they take on their issues and align their frustrations with the political motives of gay men.

Once again, the Church has not helped itself by reinforcing this stereotyping of equality between male and female homosexuality. **The**

Bible makes a clear distinction between male and female attributes and any response by the Church on any of these issues have to reflect that.

It has to be said that much of the so-called “gay agenda’s” political success would not have been possible without the involvement of women as an equal player. Their involvement gave legitimacy to a movement that, if it had just been confined to the activities of men, would not have withstood the scrutiny of judicial precedence. After all, **you cannot construct a national law that promotes gender equality without equalising sexual predilection.** So, to make this possible, it was necessary to blur the differences between men and women and confer male attributes onto the woman. Overnight, it created injustice mainly for the woman. **No allowance can now be made in law for feminine attributes, so judgement on women now contains a harshness in the legal system that wasn’t present before.** Worse still: many young men today are growing up believing that their responsibility towards women has been set aside and **they expect women to respond in a masculine way,** dehumanising their natural femininity. This has also undermined the traditional role of men as protector and provider for their mothers, sisters, daughters and especially their wives. Why was this done? To create a climate of acceptability toward a lifestyle that most people found offensive and damn the consequences to the rest of society.

ONE WAY OR ANOTHER

What about gender confusion? Where a man believes he is a woman trapped inside a man’s body or a woman who believes she is a man trapped inside a woman’s body. At a genetic level, we know that the XY chromosome determines male characteristics and the XX chromosome for the female. This is confirmed at birth by the presence of male or female genitalia. Thus gender is assigned and then endorsed by the environment that he/she grows up in. But there are anomalies. Some

studies have found a deviation from the normal gender assignment at the Chromosomal level which is physically manifested at birth where the child's sex organs are not clearly defined. At that point, **how do you assign gender?** Genetic and hormonal balance tests are normally conducted at this point and a decision made to artificially construct genitalia that most closely corresponds to the outcome of those tests.

Either that, or the child is raised in a gender neutral setting until puberty kicks in and he or she can choose the gender they feel most comfortable with. Such children cannot father or conceive naturally. **This is not a modern phenomenon.** Historically and even in the Bible people with this affliction (Yes, be in no doubt that this is a source of great misery) were referred to as born eunuchs.

However, those who were naturally born with clearly defined chromosomes and genitalia, who never-the-less still feel that they are of a gender other than the one assigned to them biologically, are **diagnosed as having an identity crisis.** They are having difficulty accepting their biologically assigned role and are literally rebelling against it, so they get operations done and become "eunuchs of men".

Once again, this has been going on for centuries. So why are we addressing it? Because their suffering is being exploited as a way of legitimising chosen behaviour, not behaviour engendered by birth or psychological trauma. **It seems we are determined to neutralise the concept of choice in what we think, say or do.** So we form a defence for our poor choices by adopting an affliction that predisposes us toward certain actions. **This removes accountability and provides a convenient excuse** for us to continue in the error of our ways without guilt or condemnation. Who is behind all this? My readers already know the answer to that one.

It is absolutely crucial that the Christian Church never allows any member to comment authoritatively on issues like this unless they

are extremely well-informed biblically, scientifically and with real-life insight. **This gender confusion is a deliberate attempt to undermine the very distinctive roles of men and women in society.** We should celebrate those differences. They go to the heart of who we are. It's more than just roles, it's more than physical, **there is a spiritual dimension as well that is powerfully significant.** Women are totally different from men on so many levels.

Women who allow themselves to be labelled as lesbians are giving credence to a big fat lie that has no basis in fact, in practise or in truth. **Lesbianism exists only where it first began,** in the fevered, corrupt imagination of sinful man.

GOING STRAIGHT

Can homosexuality be cured? Absolutely not! First of all it isn't a disease, it's a desire. Sometimes I find myself thinking about a woman in less than wholesome terms and I have a very vivid imagination. Like any gift or talent, this can be marshalled for good or evil. Knowing the difference can help me to train my thinking in a better direction but I don't always want to do that. But I have learned to exercise the spiritual disciplines of prayer, meditation and humility. Humility is the recognition that I need "outside" help to counter internal struggles.

Anyone coming out of a homosexual lifestyle, or any form of sexual dysfunction which, let's face it, is most of us, will have to be trained up in a new and better way of living. That means Biblical instruction, lots of mentoring and a renewal of our way of thinking. Some people have reported an almost instantaneous transformation from hardcore sex addict to purist. These events are not all that common. For most Christians, their experience is a daily choice to live according to the standards of the Bible, invoking the power of the Holy Spirit to assist them in that cause. **It's a daily choice and not just with sexual desires.** We must also choose not to steal, not to swear, not to get

drunk, not to lie, not to be lazy. We actually have to do the opposite of all these things which means fighting our human nature. **Some Psychiatrists feel this process of “denial” is harmful**, that it leads to a major guilt trip, depression and many harmful side effects. The operative word here is guilt. The Biblical definition of guilt is conviction of wrong-doing and the recommended treatment is repentance which leads to a wonderful sense of relief and happiness. No drugs are involved!!!

As for the Church, our approach toward the gay community must be the same as it should be toward everyone else. Namely: courtesy, politeness, respect, sincerity, truthfulness and a rock-solid Christian witness preached through the undeniability of the success of our own relationships with one another and especially with our spouse. **If we can't teach by our own personal example then we shouldn't be saying anything at all** until we've got our own lives sorted out. Even then, we need to approach this subject by realising that the life of the person we're seeking to pass judgement on could so very easily be our own life and that the Christian man or woman is not better than everybody else.

QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

Now to conclude this subject, here are some questions posed by people from both sides of this particular issue:

Don't we, as a Church, have a responsibility to save people involved in a homosexual lifestyle and lead them to Jesus Christ and save them from burning in Hell?

First of all, the Church cannot save anyone but we can pray and intercede for those who come to us asking for help. Second, **hellfire judgement is a discredited doctrine** and the fate of those who haven't been saved has not and will not be determined until a much later time

that will be outside of this life. Third, we preach first and foremost by example. People who want to hear about God can visit a local church group. Evangelism, which is the public proclaiming of the good news, can be done through media outlets and common speaking venues such as large halls or stadiums. Handing out **inoffensive** leaflets that invite people to these kinds of events are fine when done at shopping centres, etc with the full permission of the owners but deliberately targeting specific social groups without invitation is asking for trouble and is not sanctioned by scripture.

I've heard that the Government is planning to bring in laws that will force me to trade with the gay community but I want to keep them away from my business and the Bible says I should not keep company with sexually immoral people.

Actually that last part is referring to unrepentant Christians. Refusing to trade with members of the gay community is morally indefensible as well as illegal, as is refusing to employ them. There is no scriptural precedence for that kind of behaviour and as I said at the start of this subject, **almost every response from the Church has been a fear reflex** and in some cases attempts have been made to USE scripture to justify a pre-determined position instead of seeking to be informed by it.

If we do employ them, what are we supposed to do if they start kissing each other in front of the customers?

Well the answer is straight-forward. No one, gay or straight, should be kissing in the workplace.

What if a gay male employee asks a straight male employee out on a date?

What if they do? I've been asked out on a date by a man and politely refused. It's no big deal unless we choose to make it one.

What about safe-guarding the sanctity of marriage?

That's easy. Obey the marital laws from the Bible and live out the perfect example required of us. If the Government or other law-making body choose to make gay marriage legal then its their responsibility not ours! Should the Church be ASKED for its opinion on such an issue, then we reply according to the FULNESS of scripture and let them proceed as they see fit.

We are both Christians and our 17 year old daughter has told us she is seeing a lesbian, what do we do?

You respond in exactly the same way as you would if your daughter was seeing a boyfriend. Ask her to honour the rules of your household and be respectful and polite. You must extend that same courtesy toward her and her new friend. If they flaunt it in your face and refuse your rules then instruct them to leave until such time as they're willing to honour you as her parents. **Don't scream or wig out, be polite and firm.** Give them some money and tell her to call whenever she wants to talk, remember the parable of the prodigal son. You must always leave the door open.

I have a gay friend who I care about very much and I don't want him to go to hell, what do I do?

Well, first of all, don't apply a future tense to a pre-existing condition. He isn't going to hell, he's already there. He, along with billions of others are dealing with the hell we've made of this world, every day. Be a friend, keep your door open, live out your example, pray for him and be ready to give an answer for the hope that lies within you, should he ever ask you.

What about evangelism and the promotion of the gospel?

What about it? As I've already said, whether we're doing that through the media or at a public venue, ours should always be a positive message because it is one. **If it's to be a message focused on one particular section of society, then it should come in the form of a testimony** from someone who has lived through it; not a tirade from someone who has no experience of that lifestyle. Who would you send to preach to prostitutes? Surely someone who has come out of that lifestyle. Someone who is anxious to help, who understands how difficult it is and empathises with their struggle. Someone who will back up their message with extravagant kindnesses and goodwill, making no exceptions and refusing to judge them because he/she doesn't have access to their inner-most thoughts.

There is a young man in our congregation who is actively dating a man from another congregation across town. How do we handle it?

The Bible is crystal clear on this matter, "No repentance, no fellowship!". Three strikes and you're out! Strike one: speak to these two men privately, if they listen and stop doing what they're doing, then great, no problem . . . but if they don't . . . Strike two: take an older, more experienced brother/sister with you and confront them, if they still won't hear . . . Strike three: make it public and tell it to the whole Church.

I have a friend who, two years ago, came out of a gay lifestyle and became a Christian. However, he recently tested positive for AIDS and has started feeling unwell. We are all praying for him, what else can we do?

Request a free copy of *Miraculous Healing for the Church*, not for him, for yourself. If he chooses, let him make his own request. Full instructions on what to do are detailed in that book.

My local school now wants to teach my children that homosexuality is a viable life-style choice; no different from an ordinary marriage between husband and wife. What does the Bible say we should do about this?

Train your children according to the WHOLE scriptural standard set out for parents. Most crucial of all is your personal example of a happy stable marriage. Do that and your kids will be just fine. Advise other worried parents along the same lines.

What about legal action?

Doesn't change the heart does it. In fact you are far more likely to galvanise support against you. Don't play the World's games, choose to do this God's way.

If the Church, as a whole, had done this from the very beginning, if we had tempered our reaction to this subject by deferring to the wisdom of scripture; we would not be facing such rampant hostility and confusion within our own ranks as we do today. It's not too late to change but I think we have a lot of apologising to do and a lot of fences to mend. This section of this book shows the way forward for the Church and will hopefully inspire confidence in the general public.

CHAPTER SIX

End-of-Life Issues: Suicide

Some call it: “The ultimate expression of freewill”, when you are determining the timing and the manner of your own death. Others use the term: “Self-Murder”, or they say: “We should let God set the date of our demise”. When Judges are required to adjudicate the reasons behind an apparent suicide, many, especially in the West, will use the phrase: “He took his own life while the balance of his mind was disturbed”.

So who is right? Is it mental illness? **We make decisions every day that determine the outcome of our lives.** We determine what jobs we do, who we marry, where to go on vacation, what medication to take when we get sick; we don’t leave these things to chance. We don’t say, “I’ll let God determine what will happen on this matter or that,” we take personal responsibility and make decisions with the best information available to us. So why should that change when it comes to deciding when our life should end?

What is the position of the Christian Church on this issue? What does the Bible have to say about it, is committing suicide a sin? The answer is not what many people think. What about friends and relatives, those people left behind? And finally, and most importantly, **Why would anyone choose to take their own life?**

FACTS OF DEATH

Let's face it, when it comes to the subject of death we have both a gory fascination and an uneasy fear of it. There are so many unknowns: We don't know when our time is up, we don't know how it's going to happen and most of us are not too sure of what's on the other side. **Many of us have been spoon-fed all kinds of strange weird and wonderful stories about what happens after death.** Different religions have different ideas, agnostics and atheists believe death is final and permanent. Whatever you believe, the universal reaction to death is fear and we will do everything in our power to seek to avoid it. So when we hear of people that have taken their own lives, we have to respond by saying, "That's crazy, what was he thinking, why would anyone choose death?".

The pro-life position is clear: "Death in any form and by any means is to be condemned. The first and most primary right for all human beings is the right to life or existence." **We have already seen how tenuous and unrealistic that statement is.** It's expressed as an ideal, something to shoot for and it forms the basis for many of our laws, particularly those laws that relate to end-of-life issues. But as many people are coming to realise, the pursuit of that "ideal" has led to many unintended consequences that are causing a lot of misery and unnecessary pain for those caught up in these legal traps.

So what do we do when the subject of our potential demise comes up? We ignore it, we run away, hide behind the couch, shut our ears. Politicians and lawmakers, especially in the West, are loathe to debate the issues for fear that it will impact negatively on their popularity, or upset existing policies. **Religious leaders, including many Christian ones, prefer to stick to a dogma that says we should frustrate death at all costs.** Nothing is worth dying for. Life must be preserved no matter what the condition of that life may be; which is a rather strange position to take when the Christian Church

is supposed to be the leading authority on issues concerning the afterlife.

Before we go deeper into the questions relating to suicide, we have to acknowledge some of the superstitious practises that surround the experience of death itself. **For instance, clairvoyants, mystics, psychics and mediums claim to be able to talk to the dead.** Even some Christians believe that their loved ones are alive and aware in another state of consciousness in Heaven or Hell or some form of Purgatory or in-between-plane of existence. As far as the Bible is concerned, one view is just as superstitious as another.

In 1926, a brilliant showman, highly skilled in the art of illusion and escapology, died during the course of one of his acts. He went by the name of Harry Houdini. Earlier in his life, he was highly traumatised by the death of his mother who he loved very deeply. Desperate to have some form of communication with her, he travelled extensively; meeting with anyone and everyone that claimed to have contact with the dead. **By the end of his travels he was thoroughly disillusioned, believing that he had met with every charlatan, liar and confidence trickster under the sun.** He even tried to take the industry to Court, at one point testifying before a Congressional committee. In spite of this devastating exposure, many of this industry's methods remain to this day. In a final reposte, Houdini gave his wife a secret personal message before he died. He instructed her to meet with any and all mediums to determine if they could speak to him and tell her what that message was. Not a single one of them could do it!! **Through this ultimate test he completely debunked the entire industry!!**

We have already looked at what happens when people die; they enter a long sleep. **There is no consciousness, no awareness.** The Bible confirms and reiterates it by saying: "The dead know nothing". The same applies to all dead Christians and the prophets of old. Such a statement will be fiercely contested but I didn't make this up. Any

doctrine that proclaims otherwise renders huge swathes of the Bible as being obsolete, creating contradictions all over the place. Yet they will persist using examples such as the time when the Apostles saw Jesus transfigured in front of them and standing next to Him were Moses and Elijah who had been dead for ages. Doesn't this confirm an immediate afterlife? No, it doesn't. **What they witnessed was a glimpse of the future transposed to the reality of that day**, because God is not limited by the constraints of time and space in the way we are. This was not a parallel dimension of consciousness, that only exists for angels and demons.

Confused? You should be. Especially as the number one doctrine espoused by most of the Christian Church **and** many other religions speak of Paradise for the good and the torment of Hell for the bad.

Muslims are convinced that all Christians are going to Hell because they won't recognise the supremacy of Allah and the "holy" writings of Mohammed. Christians are convinced that **anyone**, who hasn't been "saved" by acknowledging Jesus as their Lord and Saviour, are going to Hell including Muslims. Well all this is very bad news for all the people who lived and died before Mohammed or Jesus ever showed up. And it's real bad news for the **billions** of people who have lived and died over the last 2,000 years who never even had a chance to hear the gospel "Good News", much less understood it.

As I've stated before, the Heaven and Hell concept, as it's currently known, just doesn't stand up to scrutiny. It's got more holes than a colander and this **theory** is not borne out by scripture, the very book on which this doctrine is supposed to be based! No wonder writers such as Richard Dawkins (author of *The God Delusion*) can do such an effective demolition job on all religions including Christianity. No wonder the Church is seen as distant and irrelevant to so many non-believers. **We (the Church) really do have to get our act together if**

the rest of the World is ever to take us seriously and, given what's coming, the need for warnings to be heeded are greater now than they've ever been.

It's okay, I haven't wandered off the point, but I needed to clarify some of the teachings about the afterlife before we address these end-of-life issues.

SO WHO COMMITS SUICIDE AND WHY?

Let's start with Government employees, specifically those who work in intelligence such as the CIA in America or MI5 in Britain. During the Cold War it was common practise to equip our agents with cyanide poison capsules that, if taken, would end their lives in seconds. This practise was deemed necessary so as to give captured agents their **only hope of escape from gruesome and excruciating torture** and thereby prevent them from revealing valuable information that could put an entire Country at risk. Similar precautions were taken with fighter pilots who might be shot down when over-flying enemy territory and end up captured. Obviously this was suicide but under these circumstances could this practise be condemned as a sin?

In wartime it was not uncommon to hear stories of heroic efforts being made by certain individuals to protect their comrades from injury or death. To accomplish this some soldiers would sacrifice their own lives such as throwing themselves onto a grenade. By any definition, this is still suicide. So under **these** circumstances, is it a sin?

In 1938, many Jewish families were still stuck in Germany and were facing capture and very harsh treatment. Rather than submit to that fate, several families chose to take their own lives and those of their children. Obviously **the motives involved were great fear and a deep desire to protect their loved ones** and not have them left to the mercy of their enemies. Was that a sin?

In 1944, the Second World War was nearly over and the allies, including a mass invasion of Russian troops poured into Germany. This was a Country filled with women and children as most of the men were already dead or taken prisoner. **These women were not stupid, they knew what was coming.** As a mass retaliation for all the hurts of the last 5 years, these soldiers descended on them like a pack of wolves. No one was spared. There was mass rape of women and children and cruelties of the most atrocious kind committed against men, women and children. First hand accounts, witness statements and official documents all attest to these events. However, some did escape. Some of the women took their children and drowned them and themselves in the Rhine. **Others hanged themselves or used other means to avoid the wrath now directed toward them.** Was suicide under these conditions a sin?

These are extreme, yet well known, examples of suicide; **where the primary motivation was escape from pain, torture, rape and almost certain death.** Did these people have any other option? Some might argue that they could have cried out to God for mercy and deliverance, but that is a fallacy and let me explain why.

THERE'S NO ESCAPE

In the historical account of the experiences of the ancient nation of Israel, it is very clearly stated that years prior to receiving punishment for disobedience, Israel was constantly being warned to change their ways and turn back to God or He would leave them unprotected. These warnings were delivered by Prophets, that is, men used by God to warn the nation. **They were given ample time to heed the warnings and make those changes,** but they chose to ignore God and continue their hedonistic ways and abuse the prophets.

Eventually came Judgement Day!! Their enemies surrounded them and killed, raped and tortured to their heart's content. No atrocity was

too much, no cruelty was too extreme, no bestiality was too horrific. **There was to be no mercy.** The people pleaded and cried out to God for mercy and forgiveness but He wouldn't hear them, why? **Because the people had refused to listen to Him when they had the chance!!** Some of those people would have taken their own lives rather than be captured by their enemies, either way their fate was sealed. **So, suicide or not, death was always going to be the outcome.**

Some people reading this may think that this is a rather callous description of how God works, but I am not telling you anything that isn't clearly taught in the Bible. Wars don't happen by accident. Remember the TV crews that were stationed on the mountain passes opened up by Nato troops when they finally went into Kosovo? As the refugees came streaming through, many of them Muslim, we kept hearing the same refrain: **"There is No God, there is no God, why didn't He help us?"** You don't have to take my word for it, the archives of British, American and European TV stations are full of this kind of footage. They were shocked and badly shaken by the sheer level of terror and ferocity that was unleashed against them.

But isn't God a God of love? Of course He is, but, like any good father, He expresses patience, mercy, temperance AND justice at the appropriate time. He takes no pleasure in the suffering of His people, just as no parent takes pleasure in having to discipline his children. **But God will not revoke the right of mankind to make his own freewill decisions.** He warns about the consequences of going a certain way but He will NOT impose His ways upon us. Please note that this is not just a judgement on nations but is much more commonly applied to individuals and their offspring.

Even the Christian Church exists as a freewill entity. No one is forced to pray, no one is forced to give, no one is forced to obey the tenets of the New Covenant. We can act and re-act as we see fit but, if

that decision contravenes the instruction of Jesus Christ, the Church should not be surprised when our prayers go unanswered.

Anyway, to conclude this part of the subject, we now know that Suicide, as a means of escape from the worst excesses of our enemies, is not – in and of itself – a sin. Rather, **this is a consequence of sin** that has no other possible outcome!! When God says He will deliver us into the hands of our enemies and that consequence comes to pass, our options are dramatically reduced. We can die fighting them, but we certainly won't defeat them. We can take our own lives and the lives of our loved ones **or** we can throw ourselves on the mercy of our enemies which, in itself, is an oxymoron as they will have every motivation to mistreat us in the most cruellest, debauched and vindictive way imaginable.

THE ULTIMATE PAIN RELIEF

What are some of the other reasons why people commit suicide? What about terminal illness or vegetative paralysis where the symptoms are set to worsen day by day? Is this a valid excuse for suicide where the afflicted person still has the means to do this? Should someone in this condition be allowed to exercise this choice as a freewill option or should it be denied to them? Yet again, we have to ask: Would suicide, under these circumstances, be a sin?

Should civil law allow this option to be exercised? This conundrum has vexed Politicians and lawmakers for generations. Even the Church appears hopelessly split on this issue but, as always, there is definitive guidance from the Bible. **We only have to look at the gospels to know that Jesus made a direct correlation between sickness, disease, disability and sin.** None of these afflictions appear by accident. Some are genetic (sins of the fathers), some are caused by seemingly random events such as accidents, war, personal attacks, poisons and other means too numerous to mention.

Some of these people make a successful recovery, others do not. For those who don't, there are only three possible outcomes:

- 1) They can accept their fate and live with their suffering until death finally relieves them by "natural means", or:
- 2) They can accept their fate but mitigate their suffering by choosing the timing and means of their own death by suicide, or
- 3) Possibly, for many, the most difficult choice of all: They can approach a Bible-teaching church and deliberately ask for prayers and instruction on what is required for repentance, **not deliverance or healing**, but repentance. That action will initiate a process that will be unique to that individual. Complete deliverance and healing will only follow once that process has been completed.

You'll be surprised how few churches give comprehensive teaching on this subject and that is not to our credit. But I digress, the answer to the question: "Is suicide a sin under these conditions?" is No!

Why? **Because the die is already cast. The effect is already in place. The outcome already decided.** But if someone does take their own life under these circumstances, they are not further condemned by some kind of eternal punishment that is set aside for people who commit suicide. There's no Biblical precedent for that. Anyone who teaches that there is needs to re-examine the basis of their belief and, ideally, keep those opinions to themselves. Of course, if we examine the motives behind those opinions, we find guilt, fear and shame: "What will the neighbours think?", "What does this say about our society?", etc.

USING SUICIDE TO ESCAPE JUSTICE

For instance, a man murders his wife and children and then takes his own life to escape the consequences. Or, a suicide bomber ignites an

explosive device that kills, cripples and maims hundreds of people and kills himself in the process. **Do they face consequences in the afterlife? No, the consequences are now, in this life!** They may escape **personal** consequences but their actions will devastate the next 3 generations of their family, as well as their parents, siblings, spouse and anyone else they care about.

There will also be consequences to anyone who was complicit in the act, especially to those who ordered it; them and all their loved ones. Again, this will carry on up to 3 or 4 generations. **In other words suicide, as a means of escaping justice, is futile and immensely costly to those he professes to care about.** However, the act of suicide is still not a sin. It is the cruelty and murderous consequences of the **means** of suicide, on others, which is reprehensible and sinful!

Someone who has committed an evil act and who, being scared of the consequences, takes his own life is committing an act of cowardice because he is leaving his loved ones to take the rap for him.

WHAT ABOUT SUICIDE CULTS?

Well, it's useless. It doesn't accomplish anything, there's no genuine, definable reason for these people to take their own life. They're not threatened, they're not sick but they are obviously deluded.

By taking their own life, have they sinned? Again the answer is no. Is it a waste? Does it devastate their loved ones? Yes and yes, but the act itself is not a sin. The person responsible for deluding them into wasting their life in this way has obviously lied and distorted the truth. He will obviously be held accountable for **those** actions.

DEPRESSION AND MENTAL DISTRESS

Well, who doesn't get depressed from time to time? What if you lose a good job or your marriage falls apart or you suffer a miscarriage, become a victim of crime or your home gets repossessed or your favourite sports team loses a championship? When things don't go our way or our expectations, in any area of life, fail to be realised our human reaction tends to be despondency.

These feelings are not made up, they are very real, it's how we react to those feelings that determine the final outcome. Some people get drunk, others take drugs. Some will immerse themselves in their work, others will over-eat. We've all done it. **We have all been in a situation where we have reacted negatively to bad news or bad situations.** Our strongest defence in situations like this comes from the strength of our relationships with other people. A strong, loving happy family can weather the worst storms that, coupled with good neighbours and strong friendships, provides an emotional support network that brings help when we most need it. **The most successful people in life work hard to create and sustain these relationships** because we never know when we're going to need that help ourselves.

But what if that support network breaks down? What if that happy, supportive family doesn't exist? Suppose we have no friends? Suppose we have gone through life mis-trusting other people because we've been abused in the past and friends have betrayed us or hurt us? What if we have been hurt and betrayed not just once but many, many times? **What if someone, who is supposed to be the person we should be able to trust the most, lets us down?** Our response in situations like that becomes, "Well, if I can't trust my own father, husband, sister, etc. . . . who can I trust?"

Then we become suspicious, unable to trust anyone. We start thinking the worst of people. Our expectations and aspirations are replaced

with fear and self loathing. **We start to notice how messed up things are, how futile life really is.** An earthquake here, a war there, divorce on the increase, recession in the economy, child abuse. Further and greater reinforcement of our negative perceptions on life and then personal disaster strikes and at that point something breaks. The final straw. No more excuses, what's the point in going on?

At this point, some people in this condition will actually become quite cheerful and will go out and execute their demise with reckless boldness. A kind of defiant, almost heroic, act. Most, however, end up swimming in sorrow and self-abuse. Addictions of all kinds, self-abuse from anorexia to sexual promiscuity, all stemming from the same motive: escapism, denial, an ostrich mentality designed to shut out the perceived and very real hurts of their existence. Of course this behaviour simply escalates the sense of hopelessness and despair until they're desperate for a final solution, for the ultimate escape. So is suicide, **under these conditions**, a sin? Again, the answer is **no!**

Suicide is always a consequence of the actions (sins) of others or personal sins of their own. But people who fall into this category are those in most need of divine mercy and forgiveness. Any outreach attempt by the Church or society in general is to be broadly welcomed and is thoroughly endorsed in scripture.

WHY TEACH SOMETHING THAT ISN'T TRUE?

So, if there is no condemnation toward people who take their own lives in the Bible, why has the Church adopted a doctrine that specifically forbids it? **Why does the Church teach that suicide is a sin?** Well, for a start, it's populist! Few people, in or out of the Church, are going to argue in favour of the self-termination of human life. No parent wants to see their children do it. Neither do siblings, friends or any relatives because it's shocking. It's unexpected. **It's a brutal**

reminder of our own mortality and then, there's the issue of guilt: "Could I have done more to prevent it? Why didn't he ask for help? If only I'd been there for him? Was it something I did, or something I said? What does this say about me, about our family, about our town, about our society?" .

Human nature being what it is, we then start the blame game: "Why didn't he think about how this would affect me or the children? Why couldn't he just face up to life and deal with the problems instead of 'running away'?" . **Some people say suicide is a selfish and cowardly way of dealing with our problems, that there had to be an alternative.** But what alternative? Put him on Psychotropic drugs, institutionalise him? That might make the caring relative feel better but his anguish is still there and his situation is now even worse. Now he has physical constraints as well as mental distress. There is no cure. We use drugs that treat some of the symptoms but their side effects are awful. We can provide psychiatric counselling but this treatment relies on his honest cooperation. Without that, we can only use manipulation and mind games and that, in the end, solves nothing.

Okay, so are there any viable options that would work? Options that would cause the patient to make a freewill choice not to kill themselves. There's always the Church. We can help in ways that no one else can. We can provide answers and direction that can literally turn that person's life around. But **who would ever consider such an option if they're only going to be told that taking their own life is a sin and that eternal hellfire waits for them if they go ahead.** The response of any suicidal person to such an assertion is going to be, "Well, I'm in hell already, so it can't be any worse than what I'm already enduring!"

In all fairness, there are many Christian groups who reach out to people who are contemplating suicide and provide genuine emotional and practical help. This is laudable and praise-worthy but **let's**

do it without perpetuating a false assertion from scripture. That just undermines our best efforts and opens us up to ridicule.

Suicide solves nothing! Well, that may be the thinking in our minds but we can't truly empathise with what a suicidal person is thinking until we're living in their situation, facing the same pressures.

For them, suicide is the ultimate escape from pain, humiliation, sickness and misery.

It's the only way to separate our human spirit from the captivity of our circumstances that only exists while we remain in our bodies.

It puts us beyond the reach of those who want to harm us. A brutal husband won't beat his dead wife. A guard can't torture a dead prisoner. A rapist can't abuse a dead child. A family won't have to suffer starvation and the brutality of their captors if they're dead.

It's the perfect protection for the victim because her tormentors can't follow her where she's going. **Is there any kind of guaranteed protection outside of death?** That depends on the individual. We can be protected by a divine mandate which includes angelic protection, favour from authorities and favourable circumstances in every area of life. But that means changing our ways and adopting a new way of living that is contrary to our natural tendencies toward selfishness and greed. Not an easy life, but given the alternative, better than what most of us are experiencing at the present time.

CHAPTER SEVEN

End-of-Life Issues: Euthanasia

Old age, disability, coma or any form of mental or physical enfeeblement that robs the affected person of his/her freedom of choice is thoroughly resented. We don't like it. It creates dependance on others; be they family members or institutional carers. We can't wash ourselves. We can't use the toilet unless someone else is there. **We are trapped and there's not a thing we can do about it.** We can't even cut our own lives short to escape this misery because we're too incapacitated to do it. So who do we turn to to end our suffering? It can only be someone who empathises with our condition. Someone who respects our right to make our own freewill decision about when and how to end our own lives. Someone who is willing to go to prison in order to help us and therein lies the debate.

First let's settle one crucial aspect of this subject: Is Euthanasia an act of murder? Well the official definition of euthanasia is "Mercy Killing". In other words, the **underlying motive behind someone doing this is a desire to ease suffering and to carry out the wishes of the patient.** Under those conditions where an individual carries out an act that knowingly results in the death of another and does this out of love and compassion, there is no condemnation. **The Bible makes a clear delineation between the motives of murder and euthanasia.**

Notice that I said two conditions need to be satisfied in order to accommodate the definition of a mercy killing. The willing, uncoerced request of the patient and the tender, compassionate motives of the person assisting them. **Both parties must also have a clear conscience on the matter.** If either or both parties are uneasy about this course of action and have convinced themselves that it's wrong, then, anyone feeling this way should not be involved. This is because unresolved guilt will bring its own condemnation. The matter has to be settled in the mind of the participants before getting involved.

TERMINAL ANXIETY

In most Western nations there is a fear of including the right to assisted suicide into the law because of the level of anxiety surrounding this subject. Not just among politicians and lawmakers but also among the general public. This uneasiness needs to be looked at more closely. Our recent history is filled with examples of genocide, a term used to describe the deliberate and systematic murder of an entire political, racial, cultural or religious group. Any move to target the poor, disenfranchised or weaker minority group is seen as a repugnant act and should be avoided at all costs. So in the West we are very careful about how we formulate our laws to ensure we never start down such a slippery slope.

When Nazi Germany was proposing the "Final Solution" in exterminating the Jewish people from among them; they were not advocating euthanasia. They were proposing murder! **They dressed up the language used, to make it seem less egregious.** When they proposed this they lost sight of their own mortality and they exposed themselves to all manner of ill fortune that would not just pursue them but all their loved ones too down through 3 or 4 generations. This would include all those who conceived the idea, administered it and carried it out.

Once again, I stipulate this to all my readers so that there is no misunderstanding: **the Jewish people were never euthanised, they were**

murdered. Systematically murdered. **Euthanasia is NOT murder.** When it is done properly, swiftly and painlessly, it is a charitable act of kindness.

Death is a fact of life affecting everyone on this planet. The Bible quotes God plainly as saying that **this life is nothing more than a vapour.** We each exist for a moment and then we're gone.

We work hard to extend our existence, but to what end? What does our extra longevity achieve? **Shouldn't life be more about accomplishment than existence?** For all humanity this life is our **first** taste of life, but most of us think this is our **only** taste of life so we fight frantically to hang onto it, why? Because we've been taught to fear physical death. That's right, we've been taught! We've been taught by others who also fear their own demise and they infect us with their fear to the point that it becomes instinctive. Note: this is different from the survival instinct that responds to dangerous situations. That is still fear-based but its purpose is to protect the person against damage to himself or others.

Those who oppose assisted suicide are afraid that some unscrupulous individuals will use a relaxation in the law to bump off elderly relatives early so they can access their inheritance before their due time. **Some fear that euthanasia could be used to cover up a murder or save money on expensive medical treatment.** Any change in the law would obviously have to accommodate these possibilities as the two conditions, already mentioned, would not be present in circumstances like the ones described.

THE MURDER OF FREE WILL

In a recent case in the UK, one doctor took it upon himself to prematurely end the lives of several of his elderly patients. In their coverage of the Harold Shipman story, the media drew parallels between his

actions and the calls for a relaxation of euthanasia laws in Britain. They argued that incidents like this would become more common. So rather than relax the laws, the implementation of existing laws should be upheld and strengthened to protect the public. But the actions of Harold Shipman would never have passed the acid test of what constitutes euthanasia.

The strangest element of the Harold Shipman story was the completely non-violent nature of his crime. Added to that was the pain-free way in which he despatched his victims. Added to that was the lack of personal motivations normally associated with the crime of murder. Namely, greed, lust or anger. His chief villainy appeared to be the lack of consent from his victims. There appeared to be no recorded agreement from them that they had consented to physician-assisted suicide. **The lack of violence, the lack of pain, the lack of threat or any form of intimidation meant that his victims died peacefully in their sleep.**

For a crime of murder this surely rates as the most benign, most innocuous act of murder in all history. Family members were understandably upset at having being cheated of the extra time they could have had with their deceased relatives but would not have suffered any anguish over the method of their departure. Unlike relatives of someone who had been hacked to death.

Psychologists have puzzled over his motivation. The only reasonable conclusion was that he wanted them to die in the most peaceful, most pain-free way possible. **His crime was that he did it without their permission** which ultimately was a selfish act where he exhibited a kind of "God" complex deciding the timing and means of their death according to **his judgement. Thereby, by-passing their God-given right to self-determination.**

Jack Kevorkian, a retired pathologist from the United states, gained notoriety as a passionate advocate for physician-assisted suicide. Not

content with just campaigning on the issue, he was also physically involved with the termination of willing subjects.

Kevorkian was a pathologist, this is someone who performs autopsies to determine cause of death. During the course of this career, Kevorkian became fascinated with the idea of physically proving the moment at which someone dies. Or how pain is experienced or not experienced. Or how we can definitively prove whether people feel pain while unconscious or in a coma. That a pathologist should demonstrate an interest in such things is not unusual. When you spend your whole life looking at cadavers where there is absolutely no trace of life whatsoever, you are bound to start asking questions about what human life really is.

Kevorkian obviously got some answers and realised the inhumanity of forced existence for those who wanted to die. He railed at what he believed was the injustice of the legal system that convicted those who wanted to help their loved ones pass away painlessly and quietly. So he offered his medical expertise to those who had decided on this course of action.

The legal system took a dim view of his stance and he was eventually imprisoned. Kevorkian broke the law and tried to poke his finger in the eye of law-makers. That doesn't change anyone's mind. **Kevorkian was handicapped in his campaign by his lack of understanding about what constitutes human life and what lies beyond this life.** He wasn't just contending with human laws but also human fears and human superstitions.

ETHICAL OPINIONS

There are many who work in the medical profession who are also ill-at-ease with having any kind of involvement in matters of abortion or euthanasia. Many cite religious belief as a reason for their

non-participation. Others excuse themselves by referring to the original hippocratic oath that forbids any action or treatment that will terminate a life. Please note: **The hippocratic oath was not, and has never been, a statement of Biblical truth.** It was an observation made by a Greek Physician about what he felt were necessary rules for a Physician to live by. They originated from his personal opinion and beliefs at the time and elements of that oath were incorporated into the modern version that some Physicians voluntarily sign up to but has never been a mandatory requirement on those practising medicine.

The main points of the modern Hippocratic oath are understood to be as follows:

- 1) **To teach medicine to the children of my teacher.** Some medical schools still give preferential consideration to the children of Physicians.
- 2) **To practise and prescribe to the best of my ability and for the good of my patients, and to try and avoid harming them.** This beneficial intent is supposed to be the motivation behind the work of any Physician. But it evokes a “We know best” attitude to the alternate options that should be made available to any patient, which is why civil law now governs much of what a Physician can and cannot do.
- 3) **Never to do deliberate harm to anyone for anyone else’s interest.** This puts the over-riding interest of the patient first and should protect his autonomy against state, civil or family interference. Put another way: The patient’s freedom of choice should be fully protected and considered.
- 4) **To avoid violating the morals of my community.** This can inevitably create a conflict between the rights of the patient and the moral sensibilities of the local community and put the Physician right in

the middle. In a democracy, judgement on any issue should seek to uphold the will of the patient but without allowing a precedent to be set within the law. Each case should be judged on its individual merits without compromising future decisions by setting unhealthy precedents.

5) To avoid attempting to do things that other specialists can do better. Some Physicians can have a problem in this area because they allow their pride to intrude on what should be a decision that will only put the patient's best interests first.

6) To keep the good of the patient as the highest priority. Well who decides that? Who construes what "the good of the patient" should be? Surely the patient or his trusted confidante are better placed to determine what that "good" should be. Ultimately the patient will be on the receiving end of whatever is decided.

ENABLING CHOICES

We've already looked at some of the motives and fears of those who oppose euthanasia and the most common defence expressed against those who oppose it is that they cannot empathise because they don't live under the circumstances endured by those who actively support it. But is that true? Some of those who are most out-spoken against it are, in fact, living through or have experienced what it's like to be totally disabled or facing an incurable debilitating condition.

Some famous examples include Christopher Reeve, the hollywood actor. **Christopher Reeve was never an advocate for Euthanasia but there is no doubt that he understood the frustrations and helplessness that resulted from his condition.** Known throughout the World for his role as Superman, Christopher Reeve was brought down to earth with a bump, both literally and figuratively when he

was thrown from his horse during the cross country portion of an Eventing competition on May 27, 1995.

He fell awkwardly and sustained serious spinal cord injuries that resulted in paralysis from the neck down. For a man who literally had the world at his feet having achieved fortune, fame and sporting success, **his life, in any sense of the word, was now effectively over.** His family and friends rallied round and optimism was served up in spades but the stress of the on-going situation, which was to last for many years, took its toll. The world moved on to other things and polite empathising noises became the only response to a man who once commanded accolades for his life achievements.

Never one to take life's reverses lying down, he used his name recognition to lobby on behalf of people with spinal cord injuries and was a passionate supporter of human embryonic stem cell research. He was lauded for his efforts in this area but in the end it didn't make any real difference to his personal situation. **Inevitably he and his family wanted their original life back.** All the fame and all the wealth in the world couldn't accomplish that. There was to be no medical miracle and his association with a "church" that did not recognise the full authority of the Bible hindered any prospect of divine intervention.

Reeve died at the age of 52 on October 10, 2004 from cardiac arrest caused by a systemic infection. His wife, Dana Reeve, died eighteen months later from lung cancer. She was only 44.

It seems cruel and unempathetic to state the truth as it really stands but **this vibrant couple used everything this world had to offer** to cope with their situation and in the end it changed nothing. Take away their fame and fortune and put this same couple in a poverty-stricken village in India facing the same situation and their life choices would have been starker but the ultimate outcome would still have been the same.

Another celebrity feted for his accomplishments despite his physical impairment is Professor Stephen Hawking. From a young age Hawking began to experience the symptoms of Motor Neurone Disease (MND) which is a rare condition caused by the breakdown of the nerve cells in the brain that control the muscles. This inevitably has a wasting effect on the body as it progresses and shuts down more and more of the normal functions of life.

A brilliant scientist, Hawking was determined to pursue his love of theoretical physics. Particularly in the fields of cosmology and quantum gravity (black holes). **It was this passion, more than anything else, that sustained him through his illness.** The debilitation continued but his zest for life was undiminished. In a statement he says, "I have had motor neurone disease for practically all my adult life. Yet it has not prevented me from having a very attractive family, and being successful in my work. This is thanks to the help I have received from Jane, my children, and a large number of other people and organisations. I have been lucky, that my condition has progressed more slowly than is often the case. But it shows that one need not lose hope."

A REALITY CHECK

Euthanasia is not an ideal for people to aim for, neither is suicide. But for many people in this life it will become the only option open to them. **We don't live in an ideal world, we live in a fallen world,** filled with broken men and women and whose children frequently bear the brunt of our poor choices or the poor choices of others, **Our broken families, our wars, our diseases, our addictions, our moral ambiguities are a constant testimony against us.** Because we don't know the way to real and lasting peace, we don't know the way to real and lasting prosperity for all. **Our relationships, our health and our way of life are all governed by immutable and unchanging laws written into the fabric of this planet.** Every

human life is a litany of condemnation and when the penalties kick in, we react against the penalties just as a prisoner reacts against his prison sentence rather than the crime that put him there in the first place.

The Christian message was always supposed to be one of good news about the fact that another had paid the penalty for us. That that person was Jesus Christ the Son of God and any who believe and accept what He has done for them will be saved out of their situation. For those who don't, some may come through these situations but most won't. For them, euthanasia does become an act of mercy from the one who provides it. They will experience life again under better circumstances and a much happier time. **Extending their life in the here and now, against their wishes, does not do them or anyone else any favours.**

We have become so arrogant here in the West, we like to measure success in life by it's longevity. We worship existence and **we put all our resources into extending length of life because we assume that's what everybody else wants.** Many of us look at death as something to be avoided because we're afraid of losing the comforts and joys that this life provides us. But for the rest of the World, **most people see death as a release** from all their pain and suffering. They've seen what this world has to offer and they have no desire to continue in its tortuous existence.

DON'T TELL ME HOW I FEEL!

We also have to look briefly at the issue of viability. This is where a person, other than the one requesting assistance with dying, makes a determination about the viability of that person's life and insists there is no sound basis for that person to seek an early death. What criteria is he or she using to arrive at that judgement? And therein lies the hypocrisy, that word judgement.

Even the most empathetic person in the world cannot fully comprehend what is going on inside the mind of another person. We cannot feel what they are feeling. We don't know the full extent of their past history. We haven't experienced to the same extent or degree the suffering they may have been through. And even if we have, our coping mechanism is not necessarily the same as theirs. Yet we want to make a judgement about their life. **We want to remove their right to self-determination because we believe we are right and they are wrong.** We don't feel good about what **they** want to do, so we **impose** our opinions, our beliefs, our guilt and our conscience onto them. It is their life, it belongs to them. If we take their life without their permission, we call it murder. **What do we call it when we refuse to terminate their life at their request?** Maybe selfishness, arrogance, hypocrisy. Constantly questioning their decision until they come up with an answer that **we** can live with. So we can walk away burping and flatulating that we have done the "right thing". Never mind that we have over-ridden their clearly expressed wish.

If someone desires to extend their life here by using whatever means are available to them, fine, let's do that. But let us also respect the wishes of those who wish to leave quietly, without any fuss. **Let's provide a swift and painless means for their exit.** There is no condemnation in the Bible either way. Those who teach otherwise are professing their ignorance and upholding traditions that have no basis in truth. They would be wise to keep silent on such matters and let the legislators form their own conclusions.

CHAPTER EIGHT

End-of-Life Issues: Execution

One of the strongest bastions of the pro-life movement is to agitate against the right of the State to execute criminals. Is there a Biblical foundation for this position? **Should the State be demonised for carrying out these penalties?** Has the State exceeded its authority by taking this position? The answers should be consistently applicable to every nation state in the world.

In the Biblical account of the life of Jesus Christ, there is only one recorded incident where Jesus was brought face to face with the subject of execution (other than his own crucifixion). One morning Jesus was sitting in the temple teaching a group of people when the Pharisees (religious zealots) stormed in. They brought with them a woman who had been caught in the very act of adultery. Please notice, they did not bring in the man; just the woman (**this gender hatred is true of religious zealots of all faiths**). “Under the law of Moses this woman should be stoned. What do you say?” they said. Jesus responded by stooping down and writing in the ground with his finger and then he made this life-altering statement: “Let he who is without sin cast the first stone!”

That one radical statement has had a profound effect on the relationship between those who judge criminal and civil matters and those

under judgement, particularly where execution is involved. In the West, we no longer have criminal sanctions against adultery, fornication or homosexuality. We have adopted the phrase of “consenting adults”, seeking to mitigate against “self righteous” accusers. We have greatly reduced the number of capital offences, considering those that went before to be less egregious (less harmful) than what we are left with. Murder with intent and rape with malice being those considered still worthy of execution. How informed is our opinion on these matters?

When Jesus responded to the Pharisees, he never offered any criticism of their judgement. He didn't say their interpretation of the Mosaic law was wrong. He never said the law had been rescinded. But he did challenge the motivation behind the woman's arrest. They hadn't done this to uphold the law, they did this to trap Jesus, but He perceived their intent and challenged that, not the law.

NO APPEASEMENT OF EVIL

So we're left with murder and rape. One is the unlawful taking of a human life. A life for a life. Most people understand why execution would be deemed appropriate in that case. That leaves rape. A life is not lost, so why not just incarcerate for a while. Those who have experienced rape and those who work with rape victims know that the repercussions of that crime go far beyond the initial incident. There are sexually transmitted diseases, unwanted pregnancies, psychological problems, relationship breakdowns both present and future, stigmatisation within the family and wider community, the list of misery is almost endless and these consequences are life-long.

This is why rape is supposed to be punishable by death. **It releases the woman from the on-going influence of the man who raped her.** Not the direct influence of personal contact but by the “one flesh” pronouncement of the law. It's even worse if the woman is made

pregnant by the rape. Her child has a major strike against him or her that could be manifested in a number of different ways. But if the man is executed, his one-flesh influence is destroyed with him and the woman is released from sharing in the consequences of his sin and so is her child if he made her pregnant and she decides to keep it.

When God advocated execution as a means of dealing with particular problems in ancient Israeli society, it was not just to punish the offender. It was not just to act as a warning to anyone else tempted to go down the same path. **It was to permanently remove the influence of on-going condemnation, not just to the victims of the offender but to national society as a whole.** Failure on the part of any nation to deal with these kinds of offences in the way proscribed by the law is to invite on-going condemnation and the spread of evil influence.

CRUEL AND UNUSUAL

The West is very critical of other nations who still execute some of their worst offenders. This is because our aspirations exceed our understanding of how the world actually works. We have also offended those of a delicate disposition who have been horrified by the methods of execution employed. There is justification for their stance. We could learn a lot from China in this respect. **Someone deserving of death under their laws is despatched quickly and painlessly by being shot in the back of the head.** The law has been satisfied by the extinction of that life. Nothing is to be gained by dragging it out through electrocution or some of the many other bizarre methods that we have employed in the past. **Any method of State execution should be swift and painless to preserve the righteousness of the judgement given.** Cruel and unusual punishment is unrighteous and will bring condemnation on all those involved.

There are many in the Christian church who will be appalled by what I've said. They will point to the hope displayed in the Christian gospel

that offenders can and should be rehabilitated. That, given enough time and counselling, an offender can be brought to repentance and will change his ways. That if we execute someone we are denying him that opportunity. They also point to the fact that some people have been executed who were innocent of their crimes.

APPEALS OR REPENTANCE

Well let's deal with this point by point because there is a great deal of confusion out there. First of all, the vast majority of people alive in the world today are living under the law. Not just national laws but planetary law that has universal application (more of this in my next book). People who find themselves charged with offences against national laws will be dealt with by the "justice system" of that nation. If convicted, they will face the punishment dictated by that nation's "justice system". Many convicts, especially those facing execution, will plead for clemency (mercy). To do that, they, or their advocates, will approach the highest authority in their state or their nation to commute their sentence or overturn the conviction. That higher authority will have to make a decision. He knows that justice must be served and he will weigh the plea for mercy accordingly. Many factors may influence his decision but once it's made, the fate of the convict is sealed.

However, the supreme authority that governs all lives and executes judgement on all peoples is God Himself. **The Bible tells us that no authority exists in the world today except that which has been allowed by Him which includes all governments, law-makers and law enforcement.** They may be the most corrupt regime on the planet, but while they hold their position, they have to be obeyed and respected. If the convicted individual, freely and of his own volition, decides to make his appeal to the ultimate authority, he must repent of every offence known and unknown that he has ever committed and accept that Christ will pay his penalty in his stead and commit himself to living the rest of his life under a new and better standard.

Will he then be released from jail? Not necessarily. Will he escape execution? Not necessarily. But he will have peace, hope for the future and a changed attitude in his relationship with everybody else. So if that nation's "justice system" still decides to execute him, won't they be going against the will of God? No. **Remember, this is not martyrdom.** He isn't being executed because he has been doing something good. He's being executed because he broke the laws of that nation. It is true that God may intercede in his circumstances to extend his life because God has a plan to use him in some way, but if He doesn't, then the execution will proceed and the government will not be condemned because it is carrying out its lawful business.

UNSAFE CONVICTIONS

What about execution of the innocent? Let's be clear, by innocent we mean innocent of that particular charge. **Not, necessarily, being innocent of other offences.** There are many documented cases of innocent people being executed or incarcerated. **They're caught in the web of a nation's "justice system" which is part and parcel of the web of condemnation that mankind has brought down on itself.** We can try and legislate against so-called injustice but as long as that condemnation remains, people will always fall through the cracks. If we willingly submit ourselves to the ultimate judge, we can avoid most of these problems and for someone in that situation, the advice is straight-forward: Go before God and ask Him for help, then do what He says.

For the Church, our role is to respect the governance and justice systems of the nation in which we're living. We should visit prisoners and counsel them about repentance and the gospel and provide help to their families on the outside. That's our primary focus. We can certainly act as advocates for mercy to the rulers of that nation but our primary responsibility is to advocate their cause to the One who can read the hearts and minds of all men and accept His judgement.

CHAPTER NINE

End-of-Life Issues: Euthanasia of Children

It is a parent's worst nightmare, to be confronted with the imminent death of their own child. Especially if this is a long, drawn-out, painful process. The parents experience a sense of despair and hopelessness that is heart-breaking to contemplate. Their sense of powerlessness in the face of the suffering of their most cherished offspring cannot possibly be imagined unless we have been through it ourselves.

There are a myriad of potential birth defects that could severely curtail the likelihood of survival of any child born into this world. Anything from Acute Leukaemia to deformed severely disabled children to conjoined twins to full-blown Aids. In less "enlightened" parts of the world, any birth deformity or sickness is seen as God's curse on that family. The medical community of the West is less concerned with apportioning blame than they are with treating the presented symptoms of the sick child and, where possible, saving his/her life.

But this is where it gets scary. **Providing the most compassionate care and the very best medical expertise is not a guarantee of the child's survivability as many parents will testify.** Even those children who do pull through are very often plagued with medical complications for the rest of their life which, in some cases will end horribly.

These are facts of life. Not nice, not pleasant but True Facts, that are lived out in the lives of millions of people throughout the world every day. Most of us are pre-occupied with our own little piece of the world and not that concerned about the reality of other people's lives. **In many cases we are almost ostrich-like in our determination to avoid confronting the full extent of the suffering that exists in this world.** This ostrich mentality also extends to our culpability, our faults, our wrong-doing, our sin. When something goes wrong, our first instinct is to blame someone or something else. **We never think to pick up a mirror.**

THE GOD OPTION

The Christian Church has two jobs to do in this world. The first is difficult, unwelcome and bitterly resented. This is when we have to explain what sin is to people who don't like to be told that they're wrong. How we all have to take personal responsibility for every word, thought and deed that has contributed to the fallen state of this world and then be prepared to embark on a total change in attitude, thinking, speaking and action.

The second job is really nice, pleasant, even wonderful for the Church and for the people of the world. This is when we can confirm that God stands ready to pardon the repentant sinner if he is willing to accept that Jesus has taken our punishment upon Himself and we, in turn, are ready to turn our lives over to Him completely. This action releases the process of healing and restoration as a new life is completely re-born. We enjoy doing the second part but have been ineffectual because of poor teaching. And we've made a bit of a mess of the first part because we'd rather avoid having to deal with it, which makes us even more ineffectual.

It comes down to this. There is a cause for every effect. A birth defect, whether genetic or environmental is a male-influenced phenomenon.

Either from the father of the baby or the father of the mum or dad. We've already touched on this. **The buck stops with the man.** Whether directly or through the genetic trail of our ancestors, a penalty has been applied and it's set in genetic concrete and cannot be changed, at least, not by physical means.

This is a spiritual matter that can only be dealt with by certain people. The trouble is, the world is filled with charlatans. Some are self-deceived, some are deliberately deceitful working only for profit and some are ill-trained and unaware of the processes involved. It's like asking a surgeon to perform an operation on a loved one. A properly trained, highly-skilled surgeon will deliver the expected result, but **he will also pick and choose his patients, knowing who will respond best** to the treatment being offered and those who won't. A false surgeon will bumble about, leaving a trail of blood in his wake and the mortuary will be filled with his useless efforts.

Some people who read the Bible think Jesus healed everybody, well He didn't. There were conditions. In fact, **there are recorded incidents of Jesus deliberately testing a candidate to ascertain his or her readiness to receive healing.** For those seeking divine deliverance the process will be one that is personal to that individual or couple. They will need instruction. Parents in the situation we've been describing had better **make absolutely sure that the person they're consulting is genuine,** fully trained and authorised to deal with their problems. As I've said on other occasions, there aren't too many people who will try to go down this road, so where does that leave everybody else.

THE SECULAR OPTION

If divine intervention is not being sought, then the fate of the child rests solely with medical intervention. Should this prove unsuccessful, then a decision will often be needed to determine if the life of the child should be terminated to prevent any further suffering. As

before, the method employed should be swift and painless. **Leaving aside the emotional trauma of such a decision, it should be clearly stated that there is no Biblical condemnation for euthanasia under these circumstances.** The church often teaches otherwise but that position is utterly groundless and only serves to exacerbate both the suffering of the child and his/her parents.

So in covering these subjects are we suggesting that the Bible is advocating the wholesale slaughter of every suffering person in this world? **Is the Bible suggesting euthanasia for everyone who is not of sound mind or body?** No, of course not. But it does uphold the right of the individual to make his or her own choice about where, when and how they may choose to end their life.

Make no mistake our days are indeed numbered, if we choose to wait out our full time, we are not condemned. If we choose to cut that time short we are not condemned. But the choice should be ours to make and the assistance of a faithful friend is to be welcomed and not feared.

There is an acronym that can be usefully applied to reflect so much of the misinformation that has surrounded so much of the subjects we have discussed so far in this book and that is the word: F.E.A.R.

Fake Evidence Appearing Real

We all need to remember something. Until Jesus was resurrected, there was NO HOPE of life after death for anyone!! Prior to that event we had Four thousand years of death with no hope that anyone would ever be seen again. They were dead, gone for eternity. **But not any more!**

All that changed when an angelic announcement was made to a group of poor shepherds on a hillside one night. One of the many events we

celebrate each year at Christmas. Real life was being promised for the very first time.

Every one you have ever known you will get to see again.

A lot of Christians go through a grieving process when one of their number dies. Why? Don't we believe what we're supposed to be preaching? Don't we believe what the Bible says? **Or are we grieving because we're still stuck here?** Now that would make sense.

CONCLUSION

It is not the purpose of this book to agitate for changes in national laws regarding any pro-life issue. Every national government must decide for themselves what is in their nations best interest. However, anyone who seeks to justify a pre-held opinion by using selective reading of the scriptures to justify it will be challenged.

All denominations of the Christian church have pretty much signed up to the idea of the importance and value of human life. They are not alone. That same ideal is expressed by every human being on this planet. How very convenient that the Christian church expresses goals and ideals consistent with the broad philosophies of the whole world. Way to be popular!

Isn't life sacred? Oh come on. Sacred just means something that's sanctified or set aside for a special purpose. Some individuals are used by God for a special purpose but that doesn't mean their life in this world is sacrosanct. In fact, more often than not, that "special calling" will often result in their early and untimely death.

But isn't all life a gift from God? Obviously nothing exists without God but nowhere does the Bible say that this life is precious and needs to be treasured. The value of our life is determined by what

we do with it, not by its longevity. If God was so concerned with length of life He would have allowed the crucifixion of Jesus at age 70 not 33. Quality of life matters to everybody. All except those who are making decisions about somebody else's life, when they only use the criteria of longevity rather than quality.

Unfortunately for them, the Bible doesn't share that view:

Large national populations are described as a drop in the bucket. The average permitted life span of even the best individual is only 70 years. Jesus described this life span as a vapour, or a flower that blooms for the briefest of moments. I could go on and on and on.

This life is short because of suffering. This life is short because of the mounting consequences of sin. We don't win any accolades for extending it. We don't right any wrongs by artificially prolonging life. The Church has no remit for celebrating existence. Yes, we acknowledge physical death but as a gift. A gift of peace, a gift of relief, even a gift of hope because we know that what lies beyond is so much better. Not just for the Church but ultimately for everybody.

CHAPTER TEN

Why the Angels are Weeping

The curse of separation from God and the spiritual death that results will not last forever. Even now, we are living in the last days of Mankind's rule over the Earth. We were all told, beginning with Adam, "Six days you shall labour and do all your work but on the seventh day, you shall rest." This was both a command and a prophecy, telling us that we would be allotted 6,000 years to try doing things **OUR** way: forming our own governments, our own societies, our own religions, our own cultures, our own laws. We would mess up and then try something else. **We would have wars and then broker a peace until the next one.** All that is finally coming to an end. Our 6,000 years are almost up and our day of rest is almost here. This is when God takes over. For He and only He knows the way to true and lasting peace and everyone that has ever lived will get to experience what that is really like and make the comparison between the way **WE** did it and the way **GOD** does it. So why are the angels weeping?

Because we are living in the last days of Mankind's rule over the Earth and the Angels know how horrifically bad it's going to get.

It's always darkest before dawn and like chess pieces on a board, each country is slowly being manoeuvred into place. The inventions

have all been made ready, the restraints are slowly being released. The political and economic colossus that is in the making is almost ready. The giddy speed of change and the decadent, downward spiral of once stable societies is rapidly accelerating. The old certainties have been swept away, creating the new age of anxiety. The architects of this so-called: "New World Order" have no true concept of what they're building. They are working with the best of intentions, paving a road toward an outcome that nobody wants and nobody expects. The master manipulator is ultimately behind all this, he knows his time is short and he is keeping us busy digging our own graves.

JUDGEMENT DAY

We've all heard tales of the "apocalypse", the "Mark of the Beast" and global conflagration. We make movies about it. Some speculate that a giant meteor will hit the Earth or global warming will herald a new Ice Age, or a new breed of animal, insect or hybrid will become the predominant life form. How about an Alien invasion or the Earth being sucked into a giant black hole by the Hadron Collider experiment in Europe?

This makes for great story telling and movie producers have grown rich from our fascination with end-time scenarios. The one big difference between what the Bible reveals about the "last days" and what movie directors produce is the fact that all these events begin with what happens to the Christian Church. It starts with us. We get affected first, then it spreads to the rest of the World.

GET HISTORICAL, NOT HYSTERICAL!

Let's start with the Christian Church and the apocalyptic scenario that took place in the 14th century. This historical event sets the stage for where the Church is at today.

Between 1348 and 1350, one third of the population of Europe (some 35 million people) were wiped out by a horrific disease known as the Bubonic Plague. It struck old and young, rich and poor, noble and peasant. Oh! and it absolutely decimated the European Christian Church. Priests, monks, laity, all members of the Clergy, either ran away or stayed and quickly succumbed to the effects of the disease themselves. It seemed nobody was immune and no one seemed to have an answer as to how to defeat this epidemic.

Biologists, even today, still argue as to the precise nature of this plague. There is no question that it was brought over from Asia, but how it survived extremes of heat and cold are still a mystery. But the Church was thoroughly discredited by these events, **not the bible**, the Church. It's very important to remember that distinction.

You see, the Church adopted many of the pagan customs of the lands into which it went. This made the gospel more "palatable" to the local inhabitants. Basic religious doctrines were decimated among the people allowing the clergy and local power structures to coexist peacefully as rites and religious ritual was seen as no threat to the status quo of that society. Of course there was no "Power" either. If Jesus had lived at that time, He would not have been affected by the plague and anyone He touched would have been instantly healed.

At the moment, on many Christian television channels, you will see "faith healers" and "healing ministers" who propagate the message of healing and prosperity. But people outside of the Christian faith are confused by the fact that these "healers" can only be found in large halls and auditoriums presiding over healing conferences. **They cannot understand why these "healers" are not going into hospitals or into hospices that house terminally ill children or into asylums that house the mentally distressed or into homes for the blind and deaf or into places that house the paraplegics.** They cannot understand why a healing evangelist would visit a foreign Country and

not go to a plague-ridden town or visit the underbelly of poverty in a disease-ridden, stinking village. The question they ask is: Why don't they do that? You will hear some convoluted answers but the real answer lies with what happened in 1348 to 1350 in Europe.

The Church was seen as powerless, that it didn't have all the answers, that it didn't have this special divine connection. They couldn't stop the plague and they couldn't heal people. The exposure was brutal and unremitting. So the world lost interest and moved into the age of enlightenment and humanism. **The Church consequently lost its social influence and decided to move toward a more mysterious religion. Their teaching focus changed from, a happier life in the here and now to an emphasis on eternal guarantees.** The beauty of this change of focus was that eternal life could not be proved or disproved. After all, how many dead people do you know of who has come back to complain? This ensured the longevity of the Christian religion because now the Church had nothing to prove. If another plague occurred, the response of the Church would be, "No we can't heal you and we can't stop the plague but look, don't worry, the next life will be better so long as you're a Christian. If you're not, then welcome to hell!"

By offering eternal guarantees through conversion, no other proofs were necessary to maintain the faith of the convert. No miracle was needed, no healing, no deliverance, nothing – just pure blind faith. **It was Jesus without the miracles, or Moses without the parting of the Red Sea.** Not long after this change of focus was adopted the Church began to split into various denominations. Over the course of the next 5 centuries, hundreds of new denominations were formed, each with its own distinct "mission" or 'message". Much good work was done. Certain outstanding individuals attributed their accomplishments to their Christian faith. But, in almost every case, these were Bible-based Christians. Men and women who actually lived by the Bible rather than just reading it.

However, even today, as we have already seen, the fear of what happened in 1348 is still prevalent. Christian healers are nervous of going into hospitals, asylums, institutes for the blind and hospices because they're uncertain of the Biblical process that brings genuine deliverance and healing to the afflicted and they're afraid of being "shown up".

So instead, still anxious to demonstrate Godly power in a more physically, tangible way, we express proof that we've been given the Holy Spirit, by lifting up our arms and babbling incoherently for a few minutes. Then we can testify that we are speaking in tongues. Or we laugh at nothing and gyrate and squirm as "proof" that we're filled with Spiritual joy. **These antics make us look ridiculous to the World** and harms the efforts of many ministries that are seeking to be taken seriously by Governments and secular institutions. This form of irreverent, pseudo worship is self-serving and self-deceiving. Jesus didn't do it, the Apostles didn't do it and the Early Church, by and large, avoided public displays of worship. Their way of life was their witness to their generation and that is how it should be today.

There can be extreme consequences to this. In a "despatches" program, aired in the UK, entitled: "Saving Africa's Witch Children", journalists uncovered a group of villages where Pentecostal evangelism had been taken to the extreme. If a village had a lot of sickness or other kind of misfortune, **a local priest would declare the presence of "demonic activity"**. They would then select some children between the ages of 3 and 10 and accuse them of witchcraft. These little children would be tortured and starved until they "confessed". The priest would then demand payment from the parents to "cleanse" him or her. If they couldn't afford it, the children would be driven out of their village and left to fend for themselves. Many were raped or horribly abused in other ways, some were sold into slavery, others were murdered and a precious few were taken in by men and women of goodwill.

We need to be exceptionally careful about what we teach and stop pursuing feelings and “spiritual experiences”.

What about the current Christian message that’s broadcast from every stage and television: **say a 30-second prayer and be saved?**

From what?

From eternal damnation. Is that it? Apparently!

Most will blithely go on with their lives giving little thought to the fact that conversion means a total and complete turn-around of their former lives where every thought, word and deed will have to come under scrutiny. Scrutiny from who? From the Bible. **The words of that book must be used to evaluate every thing we’ve ever thought said and done and it’s a lifetime of learning, understanding and action.**

What about miracles? Well you won’t see many on CNN. Most miracles are very personal. They happen quietly with little or no fanfare. They are the result of quiet, personal, private prayer, meditation and obedience. Even during the period of The Great Plague, there were reports of those who got sick but then got better, or those who never got sick at all. We call that natural immunity.

Well just how do we get natural immunity?

Well personally, I like the analogy of the American justice system where that phrase is used to describe a person found guilty of a crime but is offered “immunity” if they **agree to cooperate with an ongoing investigation**. In the Christian sense, this refers to the one who laboured intensively, going above and beyond what was required of him while others lounged about doing their own thing. Then judgement comes on the land and the labourer is unaffected because **his immunity is assured as a consequence of his devoted, faithful service.**

Ever notice one crucial word that seems to be missing from almost any message given about divine healing these days? It's the old english word: Repentance. The Biblical definition is to be made personally aware of wrong-doing, to be convicted of a desperate need for forgiveness and an unremitting determination not to repeat the offence and to seek divine help to make that possible. Then you're healed? NO! What then follows are the FRUITS of "genuine" repentance or the outward demonstration of someone who has actually changed, ie: a drunk is still a drunk unless he's been sober for a while. Once a sufficient time has passed then healing will come, although each case is individual and different. Trust me; that message will not be popular in any setting but it's the only message that actually works.

So what has all this got to do with the "last days" and the Church? Well, **there is trouble on the way**. Not small trouble, big trouble and the Christian Church is going to get it first, then the Nations of Promise, then everybody else.

FIRST, THE CHURCH

Remember, the plague in Europe showed up the weakness and hypocrisy of the Christian Church in the fourteenth century. The plague only went as far as the Christian message had spread. This time, the message has gone global, so the judgement will be global. Remember also, that not everyone caught the plague, some had natural immunity. They were kept from harm because of their faithfulness in earlier days. This time, those that have been faithful will be physically removed!

There is a story going round among evangelicals, catholics, pentecostals and almost any other denomination you care to name, about something called: **The Rapture**. This is a made-up name used to describe an event in prophecy about the END TIME. The story goes that all Christians and their families will be suddenly taken up into

Heaven and placed out of harm's way. But everybody else will be left to have the stuffing knocked out of them by wars, plague, pestilence, earthquakes and all manner of evil events. This will be a period of time known as Judgement Day which actually lasts for three and a half years. **So, yah, boo, sucks to all you sinners, I'm all right Jack, shame about the rest of you.** But can I, for the umpteenth time, go back to 1348. There were a lot of self-satisfied monks, priests, laity and clergy around who thought they had immunity from the kind of harm that the Plague represented. Well they didn't and most of them didn't find that out until it was too late.

The very same danger exists for the Church today. Jesus said, "pray that you are accounted worthy to escape all these things." **How many are worthy? According to prophecy about 50 percent of true Bible-believing Christians.** That isn't as many as you think. One thing is for sure, the Christian who thinks that they are worthy are most certainly not. The Christian who sits and judges others most certainly is not. The Christian who lives in a big fine house while others starve is not, or the one who hoards his 401K.

The so-called "rapture" will remove those who are pleading on behalf of the people of this world, who are selling everything they have to have something to give to the poor, who open their homes to the outcasts and the dispossessed. The "rapture" will remove those who stand by their faith even though they are beaten, lose their jobs and are forced out of their homes. The "rapture" will remove those who spend all their time serving in prisons, hospitals and asylums and those who bring the gospel to the poor with food, clothing, medicines and stay to help create jobs and homes.

These are the Christians who care desperately what happens to everybody else. They don't care what it costs them personally. They would happily give up their place in the "rapture" if it meant somebody else could be spared. They don't care about their life or their

possessions. They love God and they are filled to overflowing with God's love in them. These are the ones who will be saved and they're very easy to spot because right now they are working overtime to help others all over the World. And they're not talking about the "rapture", they're not thinking about the "rapture", they're too busy thinking about others to spare a thought for themselves.

So what about the unworthy, what happens to them, are they still Christians?

Oh yes they are but they've been sitting on the fence having one foot in the World and one foot in the Kingdom. Some have been pursuing non-biblical priorities or they treat their recent conversion as merely a social exercise. But now it's decision time.

Those Christians left behind will face intense persecution, torture and death. Confess to being a Christian now and we're talking certain death and it's likely to be pretty gruesome. **However, any Christian who chooses the World in order to escape persecution, will lose eternal life.** There will be no second chance for a faithless Christian.

Why does this have to happen? Because God wants to know whether those left behind are either "hot" for His ways or "cold" to them. This is sober stuff and it's no joke. Kind of changes the rather happy-go-lucky story about the "rapture" doesn't it?

SECOND: THE NATIONS OF PROMISE

First of all, who are they? They are the United Kingdom of Great Britain and the Commonwealth nations of Australia, New Zealand and Canada and the United States of America and all their respective principalities and certain parts of Europe. They're Biblically recognised in prophecy as the descendants of Ephraim and Manasseh. **They are generally considered to be the most blessed of all nations**

on the Earth. They have had all the breaks, they have enjoyed special protection, favour over their enemies, periods of unparalleled prosperity and they have practically run the World for the last 300 years.

They are called the Nations of Promise not because they are somehow better than everybody else but because they inherited a promise that was given to Abraham nearly 4000 years ago. With that promise came certain responsibilities. Namely, that these nations would conduct themselves in such a way that they would provide a good example to all the other nations round about them. **If they cast off restraint and acted foolishly, God reserved the right to discipline them.** The history of all these nations over the last 300 years clearly lays out when this occurred. When there was national repentance, things eventually settled down. The Judaeo-Christian Bible is at the heart and foundation of all these nations. Reject that instruction, reject that heritage or reject that responsibility and trouble will hit these nations like a tsunami.

But now we're nearly at the end of life on Earth as we know it. We are living in the last days of mankind's rule over God's creation. **We've had 6,000 years to get it right and we've failed everytime.** So heads down for one final try. This time, we're going to try global government. Not by conquest, but by co-dependance and compromise. First we need international bodies like the United Nations to help formulate policies and laws that have broad agreement among all the member nations. Then we divide the world up into economic blocs like the European Union, Asia and the Americas and Africa. We develop and build multi-national corporations to bring uniform, tested standards to less developed Countries, thereby ensuring their rapid economic growth. Let's be honest, so far, apart from the occasional hiccup, the world economic plan is working. Trade agreements are holding. Massive infrastructure projects are on-time and on-budget smoothing the flow of information, goods and services around the world. At the time of writing, there is a lot of news about the **global credit crunch** but this is necessary to facilitate a power shift away from national

Government towards Global Government. We all helped facilitate this through greed and too much debt.

But there's a problem. What to do about Political cohesion, **how do we get self-serving nations to cooperate with the global plan?** Economic integration is near enough complete but we need political integration on a massive scale to make global government a reality. Just when all seems lost, along comes a group of scientists with the ideal vehicle to make this all possible. That's right: "Global Warming". Better still: **MAN-MADE Global Warming**. Hmmm but the man-made cause has to be innocuous, difficult to prove or dis-prove. I know: How about carbon-dioxide emissions. All living things emit it, so it must be affecting the planet, right? Ecology is the in-thing so the Greens will go for it, so will the cash-starved scientists desperate for grants, so will the Politicians desperate for more power, bigger government and higher taxes, so let's give them "Green" taxes.

IS GLOBAL WARMING MAN-MADE?

Well the answer is that global warming is a consequence of some of mans activities but it has nothing to do with his carbon footprint. Let's assume that overnight we were able to reduce worldwide man-made carbon emissions by 95%. We closed all polluting factories and scrapped all vehicles. **It wouldn't make a blind bit of difference to the unusual weather patterns.** We would still see a massive increase in droughts, typhoons, hurricanes, rising sea levels and many other kinds of severe weather events. Getting rid of carbon emissions wouldn't change any of that. Why?

From a scientific stand-point, the sun controls what happens to the weather on this planet. A few extra solar storms on the sun could devastate an entire continent. Man's physical impact on the outcome of weather events is virtually non-existent because **we don't control what the sun does.**

But man's activities **do** affect the weather on this planet, just not his carbon footprint. The Bible is crystal clear on this point: **Our sinful activities affect the weather.** Failure to acknowledge God as the provider of everything we have to enjoy in this life. Failure to acknowledge Him as Creator and sustainer of all life on Earth. Failure to abide by and even acknowledge His laws, which, when violated, create breakdown of family and society which leads to all manner of war, violence and death. Oh, and it also affects what happens to the land and to animals as well as what happens to the weather.

The scientific community and government agencies advocate repentance on a global scale to change our carbon polluting ways. This will change nothing. But **God advocates repentance on a global scale** to change our sinful ways of greed, selfishness, sexual incontinence and prideful arrogance. That will change everything.

In the meantime, our quest for global government continues. Now we need international conferences to highlight global warming. As a problem it knows no geographical boundaries, it respects no national borders. Ergo, national self interest must be sacrificed in favour of international "cooperation" to tackle this global threat. **If one nation kicks up a fuss about anything, just calm them with some global warming and its dire threat to all humanity.**

Great, so political integration is well on its way. Now, what are we going to do about religion? First let's look at what we can agree on. One God, excellent, anything else? No? Oh well, let's put our thinking caps on because **we only want one religion, not fifty.** It will take some doing but we will succeed. Can you imagine a worldwide religion that includes Christianity, Islam, Hindus and Jews? What kind of doctrine would keep them all happy? Would you like to hear it? Let me show you:

- 1) They will all broadly agree on Heaven and Hell.

- 2) Subjugation of women is very important, so the anti-abortion stance will stay.
- 3) Most of the pro-life imperatives are popular with the masses, so they will stay.
- 4) And agreement on lots and lots of rituals and splendour will complete the mix.
- 5) One last point, Jesus will stay but only as a very nice man. NOT as the Son of God.
- 6) Finally, this worldwide religion will need a leader, someone who appeals to everyone, who is all things to all people.

In some ways I understand their need to try this. Getting religions to agree on basic principles helps quell the competitive wranglings that cause so much strife between them. **The first test of this new ecumenical spirit will be the settlement of the Israeli/Palestinian question.** They will succeed but the success will be short-lived.

This movement toward world government has been going on for the last 40 years and most of the pieces are already in place. However, along the way there have been bumps like the war in Bosnia, the wars in Africa and other small messy conflicts around the world. Each conflict has been settled with minimal force and lots of compromise. **The trouble is, the victims of all these conflicts have not seen any justice done and there is a cauldron of seething resentment out there that stays hidden just under the surface.** That is why, when the time comes when all politicians start standing up and saying Peace, Peace, we finally have real peace, sheer havoc will suddenly break out and that will be the time when this new world government will abandon all pretence at the softly, softly approach toward global harmony. It will get tough and will be absolutely brutal in its repression.

Now, the Nations of Promise will go along with this new world order but only up to a point. The governments of the nations of promise are all broadly in favour of its objectives, eg: world peace, harmonisation of trading practise, etc. But many of their people are uneasy. They can sense something is not quite right about all this and their natural instincts are to withdraw back within their borders. These democratic governments change every few years from Labour to Conservative and back again. The governments change, the policies change but **their civil service remains constant and it's through this government engine that the New World Order has chosen to work.** They handle the red tape, a whole avalanche of it over the last 20 years and any government is now trussed up before they're even sworn into office. So the governments are effectively tamed, they're encouraged to borrow gigantic amounts of money which renders them **servile to the lender and easily "managed"**.

But their people are largely sceptical about this whole globalisation process. However, they're also weighted down with excessive personal debt and most of their jobs are funded through overseas companies, **which makes them susceptible to . . . ahem, reason!!** Also, as media independence is now almost non-existent, their "cooperation" as the mouthpiece of Corporate and Government influence can be fully relied upon. Maverick reporters and independent News organisations that seek to depart from "on-message" items will simply be subsumed into an ocean of viewer and listener choice. Their message will never see the light of day.

So, at what point will the Nations of Promise realise what's going on and withdraw themselves from this road to imminent destruction? **They won't see it until it's too late and they will be the first to be hit.** The Bible uses the term "sudden destruction" but we won't be talking about a couple of towers. This will be destruction on a massive scale.

The Nations of Promise have always had their enemies. Those that hate their blessed status, who hate their freedom and they're

biding their time waiting for the NoP to lower their guard. Waiting for them to intermingle their forces, to give up their boundary protections. Much of that has already been conceded. **Won't we fight if we're attacked?** I'm sure we will, but I refer you to the earlier chapter on End-of Life issues. Once a nation has been judged, their enemies will prevail, doesn't matter how strong we think we are.

Can it be prevented? I don't think so, events are already so far advanced. But on a personal level you can put yourself and your family under divine protection by following clear scriptural guidance. Choose any church you want but the ultimate arbiter of your future and those of your loved ones is the God of the Bible and He never lies.

EVERYBODY ELSE

As for the rest of the World. Once the Nations of Promise have been dealt with, there will be a marked increase in famines, plagues of all types and descriptions and social violence and degradation on a huge scale. Massive earthquakes, volcanos, unbelievably freakish weather. **Again, to survive this, the people must turn to God and throw themselves on His mercy.** Of course, the second they do that, the persecutors of the global government will come after them. Which is why so many will have to flee into the wilds to escape.

Finally, Jesus Christ Himself will come back with a celestial army. The world will be at its greatest point of madness and will actually try to fight Him with its own gigantic army. But their flesh will rot from off their bones where they stand and **Jesus Christ will finally be inaugurated as King over the whole Earth.**

And that's when the story becomes a lot more cheerful and it's pro-life and pro-eternal-life from that point on.

The curse will finally be lifted. The enemy of both God and Man will be taken away and a new day will dawn on the people that are still left. The Bible indicates that approximately two thirds of the current population of the world will have been destroyed. This means the "New Age" will start with approximately two billion people.

Across the whole world these people will emerge from hiding; hungry, bleary-eyed, blinking in the daylight. Many will be wounded or sick. The landscape and cities round about them will be devastated. But even at this point they will smell the change in the air. There is a peace and a stillness they cannot explain. It's not just in the air, it's within themselves. The fear has gone! Something has definitely changed.

Now they see some people coming towards them. They're bringing food and warm clothes. There is a warmth about them, an inner sense of joy that just radiates out from them. Their eyes are kind, non-threatening, their voices soothing, empathetic.

"You can relax," they say. "It's all over. We will tend to your wounded and your sick. You are now starting the first day of a wonderful new life. The Earth is under New Management!"

To my readers I say: Stay Informed; be Warned, be alert and make wise decisions concerning your future and those of your loved ones.

SCRIPTURES
AND
COMMENTARY

What Is the Point of Life?

To be amazed by the beauty of creation
To witness the stupidity of man
To mourn the futility of death
To value truth and Love
To desire something so much better

From the Introduction

WE BELIEVE ONLY WHAT WE WANT TO BELIEVE. THE TRUTH ABOUT OUR LIVES AND THE WORLD THAT WE LIVE IN IS GIVEN ONLY TO THOSE WHO SEEK AFTER IT. THERE IS MORE TO THIS LIFE THAN WE COULD POSSIBLY KNOW. A BELIEVER OF THE TRUTH WILL BE SAVED OUT OF THE TRAP THAT WILL CATCH EVERYBODY ELSE. THIS IS THE TRAP:

2 Thes 2:3–12

³ Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition,

⁴ who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshipped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.

⁵ Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things?

⁶ And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time.

⁷ For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way.

⁸ And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming.

⁹ The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders,

¹⁰ and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

¹¹ **And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie,**

¹² that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

ALL HUMAN BEINGS ARE COMPRISED FROM THREE DISTINCT, YET THREE INSEPARABLE, PARTS: BODY, SOUL AND THE HUMAN SPIRIT. WE RECOGNISE THE FIRST TWO BUT RARELY ACKNOWLEDGE THE THIRD PART WHICH IS ALSO THE MOST IMPORTANT.

FIRST AND FOREMOST WE ARE SPIRITS. THE BIBLE IS CRYSTAL CLEAR ON THIS AS ALL THE FOLLOWING SCRIPTURES TESTIFY:

Num 16:22

Then they fell on their faces, and said, "O God, **the God of the spirits of all flesh**, shall **one** man sin, and You be angry with all the congregation?"

Job 32:8

But there is a **spirit** in **man**, And the breath of the Almighty gives him understanding.

Ps 32:2

Blessed is the **man** to whom the Lord does not impute iniquity, And in whose **spirit** there is no deceit.

Ps 44:25

For our **soul** is bowed down to the dust; Our **body** clings to the ground.

Pr 18:14

The **spirit** of a **man** will sustain him in sickness, But who can bear a broken **spirit**?

Pr 20:27

The **spirit** of a **man** is the lamp of the Lord, Searching all the inner depths of his heart.

Ec 3:21

Who knows **the spirit of the sons of men**, which goes upward, and the spirit of the animal, which goes down to the earth?

Isa 57:16

I will not accuse forever, nor will I always be angry, for then the **spirit** of **man** would grow faint before me – the breath of **man** that I have created.

Zec 12:1

The burden* of the word of the Lord against Israel. Thus says the Lord, who stretches out the heavens, lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the **spirit of man** within him:

Mt 10:28

And do not fear those who kill the **body** but cannot kill the **soul**. But rather fear Him who is able to destroy both **soul** and **body** in hell.

1 Cor 2:11

For what man **knows** the things of a man except **the spirit of the man** which is in him?

Jas 2:26

For as the **body without the spirit is dead**, so faith without works is dead also.

GOD KNOWS THE TRUTH ABOUT THE WORLD, ABOUT ALL EVENTS AND EVERY THOUGHT THAT HAS EVER ENTERED THE HEARTS OF MEN

1 John 3:20

For if our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart, and **knows all things**.

Job 11:11

For He **knows** deceitful men; He sees wickedness also. Will He not then consider it?

Job 34:25

Therefore he **knows** their works; He overthrows them in the night, And they are crushed.

Ps 1:6

For the Lord **knows** the way of the righteous, But the way of the ungodly shall perish.

Ps 44:21

Would not God search this out? For He **knows** the secrets of the heart.

Ps 94:11

The Lord **knows** the thoughts of man, That they are futile.

Ps 103:14

For He **knows** our frame; He remembers that we are dust.

Da 2:22

He reveals deep and secret things; He **knows** what is in the darkness,
And light dwells with Him.

Lu 16:15

And He said to them, "You are those who justify yourselves before men, but God **knows** your hearts. For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.

1 Cor 3:20

"The Lord **knows** the thoughts of the wise, that they are futile."

1 John 3:20

For if our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart, and **knows all things**.

DOES THE BIBLE CONFIRM THERE IS ERROR IN THE CHURCH AND IN OUR TEACHINGS? IT SURE DOES AND IT ALSO POINTS OUT HOW IT HAPPENS, WHY IT HAPPENS AND HOW WE CAN CORRECT IT:

Mt 15:9

And in vain they worship Me, Teaching as doctrines the **commandments of men.**' "

Col 2:22

which all concern things which perish with the using, according to the **commandments** and doctrines **of men?**

Tit 1:14

not giving heed to Jewish fables and **commandments of men** who turn from the truth.

Ec 10:5

There is an evil I have seen under the sun, As an **error** proceeding from the ruler:

Isa 32:6

For the foolish person will speak foolishness, And his heart will work iniquity: To practice ungodliness, To utter **error** against the Lord, To keep the hungry unsatisfied, And he will cause the drink of the thirsty to fail.

THE TEACHERS DON'T FEED THE SHEEP OR PROVIDE A WORD IN DUE SEASON. LIKE RAISING CHILDREN ON A POOR DIET THIS LEADS TO SICKNESS AND STUNTED GROWTH. FOR THE CHURCH THIS MEANS WRONG PRIORITIES, DISTRACTIONS AND VULNERABILITY TO SIN:

2 Pe 2:18

For when they speak great swelling words of emptiness, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through lewdness, the ones who have actually escaped from those who live in **error**.

2 Pe 3:17

You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the **error** of the wicked;

1 John 4:6

We are of God. He who knows God hears us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of **error**.

Jude 1:11

Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, have run greedily in the **error** of Balaam for profit, and perished in the rebellion of Korah.

THOSE WHO TEACH MUST DO SO FROM THE BIBLE AND MUST LOOK TO THE PURITY OF THEIR OWN HEART, UNCORRUPTED BY ANY FORM OF WORLDLY THINKING AND ENSURE THEY HAVE BEEN DULY AUTHORISED TO DO SO.

Ex 18:20

And you shall **teach** them the statutes and the laws, and show them the way in which they must walk and the work they must do.

1 Sa 12:23

Moreover, as for me, far be it from me that I should sin against the Lord in ceasing to pray for you; but I will **teach** you the good and the right way.

Mic 3:11

Her heads judge for a bribe, Her priests **teach** for pay, And her prophets divine for money. Yet they lean on the Lord, and say, "Is not the Lord among us? No harm can come upon us."

THE MOTIVE OF THE TEACHER IS PARAMOUNT. ANYTHING LESS THAN PURITY IN MOTIVE WILL CAUSE THAT TEACHER TO BE LED ASTRAY.

Job 6:24

Teach me, and I will hold my tongue; Cause me to understand wherein I have erred.

1 Tim 4:16

Take heed to yourself and to the doctrine. Continue in them, for in doing this you will save both yourself and those who hear you.

THE MOTIVE OF THE LISTENER IS JUST AS IMPORTANT AND HE MUST STUDY AND CHECK THE SCRIPTURES FOR HIMSELF TO CONFIRM HIS OWN UNDERSTANDING:

Mt 7:24

Therefore whoever **hears** these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock:

1 John 4:6

We are of God. He who knows God **hears** us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

WE ALSO LEARN FROM REAL LIFE EXPERIENCES, FROM THE WORLD AROUND US, FROM OBSERVATION AND FROM TESTING:

Job 12:7

But now ask the beasts, and they will **teach** you; And the birds of the air, and they will tell you;

Job 12:8

Or speak to the earth, and it will **teach** you; And the fish of the sea will explain to you.

A DESIRE TO LEARN AND BE OPEN TO CORRECTION IS THE HALLMARK OF A GOOD STUDENT.

Ps 25:4

Show me Your ways, O Lord; **Teach** me Your paths.

Ps 34:11

Come, you children, listen to me; I will **teach** you the fear of the Lord.

Isa 66:2

But on this one will I look: On him who is poor and of a **contrite** spirit,
And who trembles at My word.

WE NEED TO TEACH JUSTICE AND RESPECT WHICH ARE THE HALLMARKS OF LOVE IN ACTION, AS WELL AS MERCY AND SACRIFICE.

Ps 86:11

Teach me Your way, O Lord; I will walk in Your truth; Unite my heart to fear Your name.

Gal 3:24

Therefore the law was our **tutor** to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

LEARNING IS NOT ENOUGH, WE MUST DO WHAT THE WORD TELLS US, THEN OUR KNOWLEDGE AND COMPREHENSION WILL INCREASE.

Pr 9:9

Give instruction to a wise man, and he will be still wiser; **Teach** a just man, and he will increase in learning.

Eze 44:23

And they shall **teach** My people the difference between the holy and the unholy, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean.

Jas 1: 22–25

²² But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves.

²³ For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man observing his natural face in a mirror;

²⁴ for he observes himself, goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was.

²⁵ But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does.

THE RIGHT WAY OR THE WRONG WAY. NO GREY AREAS FOR A TEACHER OF THE WORD. HIS INSTRUCTION MUST INFORM HIS STUDENTS OF THE CHOICES BEFORE THEM AND URGE THEM TO DO THE RIGHT.

De 32:4

He is the Rock, His work is **perfect**; For all His **ways** are justice,
A God of truth and without injustice; Righteous and upright is He.

Jas 1:17

Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning.

JESUS COULDN'T GIVE A HOOT WHAT ANYONE THOUGHT ABOUT HIM. HE TAUGHT THE TRUTH UNCOMPROMISED, UNVARNISHED. HE DID NOT CRAVE THE APPROVAL OF MEN. HE ONLY SOUGHT THE APPROVAL OF HIS HEAVENLY FATHER. THIS SAME FOUNDATION MUST UNDERPIN THE MOTIVES OF ALL TEACHERS.

Mt 22:16

And they sent to Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying,
“Teacher, we know that You are true, and teach the way of God in truth;
nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men.”

JESUS WAS GRIEVED BY THE FACT THAT SO MUCH SUFFERING WAS DOWN TO IGNORANCE, SO HE TAUGHT THEM WHAT THEY NEEDED TO KNOW. HE TAUGHT THEM KNOWLEDGE THAT WOULD LEAD TO DELIVERANCE FROM THEIR SUFFERING AND THE WAY TO A MORE ABUNDANT, JOY-FILLED LIFE.

Mr 6:34

And Jesus, when He came out, saw a great multitude and was moved with compassion for them, because they were like sheep not having a shepherd. So He began to **teach** them many things.

THE HOLY SPIRIT INSPIRED EVERY WORD OF THE BIBLE AND ASSISTS THE STUDENT IN HIS UNDERSTANDING OF IT.

Joh 14:26

But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will **teach** you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you.

Ro 2:21

You, therefore, who **teach** another, do you not **teach** yourself? You who preach that a man should not steal, do you steal?

IT'S THAT HYPOCRISY THING AGAIN. ANYONE WHO TEACHES A CERTAIN THING AND DOES NOT DO IT HIMSELF IS A HYPOCRITE AND CAN'T BE TRUSTED AND HIS TEACHING IS INVALIDATED BY HIS POOR EXAMPLE.

Heb 5:12

For though by this time you ought to be **teachers**, you need someone to **teach** you again the first principles of the oracles of God; and you have come to need milk and not solid food.

JUST ABOUT EVERYTHING COVERED IN THIS BOOK RELATES TO "FIRST PRINCIPLES" FROM THE BIBLE. WE HAVE TO GET THE BASICS RIGHT BEFORE WE CAN TEACH THE FULL GOSPEL. WE CANNOT AFFORD ERROR. IF WE CAN'T GET THE TRUTH RIGHT, THEN WHO CAN?

Jas 3:1

My brethren, let not many of you become **teachers**, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgement.

MY LIFE AND MY WORK IS TOTALLY GOVERNED BY THIS SCRIPTURE. I WOULDN'T DARE TEACH SOMETHING UNLESS I WAS TOTALLY CONVINCED OF THE TRUTH OF IT IN REAL LIFE EXPERIENCE AND FULL ENDORSEMENT

WITHIN THE SCRIPTURES WITH NO POSSIBILITY OF CONTRADICTION BY OTHER SCRIPTURES. ALL BIBLE TEACHERS MUST BE HELD TO THIS SAME STRICT STANDARD.

THE BIBLE INTERPRETS ITSELF. IT NEVER CONTRADICTS ITSELF. THERE IS NOTHING THAT ANY MAN CAN ADD OR TAKE AWAY AND IT IS NOT SUBJECT TO ANY PRIVATE INTERPRETATION. ANY TEACHING FROM MAN THAT DOES NOT RECOGNISE ALL THE ABOVE IS, BY DEFINITION, NOT BIBLICALLY-BASED AND IS MAN-MADE AND NOT GOD-BREATHED.

Isa 28:10

For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept, Line upon line, line upon line, **Here a little, there a little.**

De 19:15

One witness shall not rise against a man concerning any iniquity or any sin that he commits; by the mouth of two or three **witnesses** the matter shall be established.

Mt 18:16

But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three **witnesses** every word may be established.'

2 Cor 13:1

This will be the third time I am coming to you. "By the mouth of two or three **witnesses** every word shall be established."

2 Pe 1:20

knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any **private interpretation,**

THE PRINCIPLE IS FIRMLY ESTABLISHED THAT ANY TEACHING IS BUILT LESSON BY LESSON, SCRIPTURE BY SCRIPTURE. ONE WILL INFORM THE OTHER. IF A SCRIPTURE APPEARS TO BE SAYING ONE THING, IT WILL BE CONFIRMED BY AT LEAST TWO OR THREE OTHERS SAYING THE SAME THING.

WE CANNOT PULL APART THE BIBLE TO SUIT OUR PRE-CONCEIVED CONVICTIONS. WE HAVE TO BE TAUGHT BY THE WHOLE BIBLE WITH NO PRIVATE

INTERPRETATION, OTHERWISE WE END UP WITH THE KIND OF DOCTRINAL MESS THAT WE'RE CURRENTLY HAVING TO DEAL WITH.

Pr 3:5

Trust in the Lord with all your heart, And **lean not on your own understanding;**

WE'RE LEFT WITH THIS FINAL WARNING TO TEACHERS WHO ADD TO, OR, TAKE AWAY FROM, THE ORIGINAL WRITINGS OF THE BIBLE.

Rev 22

18 For I testify to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone **adds to these things**, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book;

19 and if anyone **takes away from the words of the book** of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

SOME WILL ARGUE THAT THIS INSTRUCTION ONLY APPLIES TO REVELATION, BUT THE BOOK OF REVELATION CANNOT BE UNDERSTOOD OR INTERPRETED WITHOUT THE REST OF THE BIBLE.

Ps 119:160

The entirety of Your **word is truth**, And every one of Your righteous judgements endures forever.

THE WHOLE BIBLE IS A COMPLETED WORK. WE CANNOT REMOVE SO MUCH AS ONE SCRIPTURE, WITHOUT BRINGING DOWN THE WHOLE BUILDING. ANY TEACHING THAT CREATES A CONTRADICTION IN ANOTHER PART OF THE BIBLE MUST BE RECONSIDERED.

Jas 1:17

Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father **of lights**, with whom **there is no variation or shadow of turning.**

GOD IS CONSISTENT AND PERFECT IN ALL OF HIS WAYS. WE ONLY NEED TO LOOK AT THE DESIGN OF HIS CREATION TO SEE BOTH THE AMAZING

COMPLEXITY AND THE PERFECT SYMMETRY DISPLAYED IN THE FLORA, FAUNA AND NATURAL LAWS OF HIS EARTH. HIS WHOLE WORD EMULATES THAT SAME DEGREE OF PERFECTION AND SYNERGY.

2 Cor 4:2

But we have renounced **the hidden things of shame**, not walking in craftiness **nor handling the word of God deceitfully**, but by manifestation **of the truth** commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

2 Tim 2:15

Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, **rightly dividing the word of truth**.

From Chapter One

ENSLAVEMENT TO FEAR OF DEATH

Heb 2:15

and release those who through **fear of death** were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

SLEEP WAS CREATED TO IMITATE DEATH

Job 14:12

So man lies down and does not rise. Till the heavens are no more, They will not awake Nor be roused from their **sleep**.

Ps 13:3

Consider and hear me, O Lord my God; Enlighten my eyes, Lest I **sleep** the **sleep** of death;

Ps 76:6

At Your rebuke, O God of Jacob, Both the chariot and horse were cast into a dead **sleep**.

Da 12:2

And many of those who **sleep** in the dust of the earth shall awake, Some to everlasting life, Some to shame and everlasting contempt.

John 11:

¹¹ These things He said, and after that He said to them, "Our friend Lazarus sleeps, but I go that I may wake him up."

¹² Then His disciples said, "Lord, if he sleeps he will get well."

¹³ **However, Jesus spoke of his death, but they thought that He was speaking about taking rest in sleep.**

¹⁴ Then Jesus said to them plainly, "Lazarus is dead."

1 Cor 15:

⁵¹ **Behold**, I tell you a mystery: **We shall not all sleep**, but we shall all be changed –

⁵² in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

OBVIOUSLY, THE SECOND PART OF THIS VERSE ONLY REFERS TO CHRISTIANS BUT, EVEN FOR CHRISTIANS, DEATH MEANS THE SAME SLEEP AS EVERYBODY ELSE UNTIL THE APPOINTED TIME FOR THEIR RESURRECTION.

THE BIBLE CLEARLY MAKES THE ASSOCIATION BETWEEN SLEEP AND DEATH, SO ALL HUMANITY KNOWS WHAT DEATH IS LIKE. THERE ARE NO DREAMS OR CONSCIOUS THOUGHTS AND IT IS RECKLESS, UNTRUE AND IRRESPONSIBLE OF THOSE WHO SUGGEST OTHERWISE.

HUMAN BEINGS JUST CAN'T BELIEVE THAT IT'S ALL OVER WHEN SOMEONE DIES, THAT THEY'LL NEVER SEE THEIR LOVED ONE AGAIN AND THERE IS A REASON FOR THIS:

Ec 3:11

He has made everything beautiful in its time. Also **He has put eternity in their hearts**, except that no one can find out the work that God does from beginning to end.

THAT'S RIGHT! THIS STUFF IS INHERENT IN THE SPIRIT OF MAN. MEN AND WOMEN KNOW THAT THERE HAS TO BE MORE THAN THIS. THEY CAN'T HELP THEMSELVES. THEY MAY NOT KNOW THE BIBLE, THEY MAY NOT KNOW ABOUT GOD BUT THEY KNOW WHAT'S INSIDE THEM AND IT BOTH SCARES AND FASCINATES THEM.

MANY PEOPLE BELIEVE THIS LIFE IS ALL THERE IS. THE BIBLE SAYS OTHERWISE:

Rev 2:11 – Show Context

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes shall not be hurt by the **second death**.

Rev 20:6 – Show Context

Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the **second death** has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

Rev 20:14 – Show Context

Then **Death** and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the **second death**.

Rev 21:8 – Show Context

But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the **second death**.

THE LIFE WE HAVE JUST NOW IS OUR FIRST LIFE. WHEN THAT ENDS, WE EXPERIENCE OUR FIRST DEATH. YOU CAN'T HAVE A SECOND DEATH WITHOUT A SECOND LIFE, CAN YOU?

Rev 20:5 – Show Context

But the rest of the dead did not **live again** until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

IT'S AMAZING HOW LITTLE CREDIT THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH, AS A WHOLE, GIVES TO JESUS TO CELEBRATE THE FULL EXTENT OF WHAT HE ACTUALLY DID. BY HIS LIFE, DEATH AND RESURRECTION JESUS MADE RECONCILIATION

POSSIBLE BETWEEN ALL MANKIND AND GOD. NINETY PERCENT OF PEOPLE THAT HAVE LIVED AND DIED, ARE LIVING NOW AND, WHO WILL LIVE IN THE FUTURE WILL NOT EXPERIENCE THAT RECONCILIATION UNTIL THE NEXT LIFE. THAT'S A BIG PART OF THE GOSPEL MESSAGE BUT IT'S BEEN CORRUPTED BY SUPERSTITION. AS WE PROCEED THE BIBLE WILL SHOW US MORE AND MORE AND THERE ARE NO CONTRADICTIONS.

ALL OF US HUMAN BEINGS ARE ALIVE ON THE EARTH AT THE MOMENT, BUT THE BIBLE SAYS MANY OF US ARE DEAD!!

SO WE ARE LIVING, BREATHING DEAD PEOPLE. LET'S SEE WHAT THE BIBLE ACTUALLY SAYS ABOUT THIS:

Rev 3:1

And to the angel of the church in Sardis write, "These things says He who has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars: 'I know your works, that you have a name that you are **alive**, but you are **dead**.'"

Ro 6:11

Likewise you also, reckon yourselves to be **dead** indeed to sin, but **alive** to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Ro 6:13

And do not present your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being **alive** from the **dead**, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God.

Eph 2:1

And you He made **alive**, who were **dead** in trespasses and sins,

Eph 2:5

even when we were **dead** in trespasses, made us **alive** together with Christ (by grace you have been saved),

Col 2:13

And you, being **dead** in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has made **alive** together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

AS FAR AS GOD IS CONCERNED, ALL LIVING HUMAN BEINGS WHO ARE NOT RECONCILED TO HIM ARE DEAD. DEAD IN THEIR SINFUL THOUGHTS AND MOTIVATION, DEAD IN THEIR WORDS WITHOUT HOPE OR KNOWLEDGE AND DEAD IN THEIR ACTIONS.

HUMANITY LIVES THE WAY OF DEATH, WE CLING TO THE WAY OF DEATH, WE SPEAK THE WORDS OF DEATH AND WE FOLLOW THE EMOTIONS OF DEATH. BECAUSE WE'RE CUT OFF FROM OUR CREATOR, WE IGNORE HIM AND WE IGNORE HIS WAYS.

HE IS THE SOURCE OF ALL LIFE.

WE SHUT HIM OUT, WE CUT OFF OUR SOURCE TO LIFE, HEALTH, ABUNDANCE AND SAFETY AND WE LIVE IN FEAR AND PERMANENT UNEASE.

De 30:19

I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, that I have set before you **life** and death, blessing and cursing; therefore **choose life**, that both you and your descendants may live;

ALL HUMAN BEINGS HAVE SOMETHING CALLED: FREE MORAL AGENCY. WE HAVE A GOD-GIVEN RIGHT TO MAKE OUR OWN CHOICES IN THIS LIFE.

Jos 24:15

And if it seems evil to you to serve the Lord, **choose** for yourselves this day whom you will serve,

Job 15:5

For your iniquity teaches your mouth, And you **choose** the tongue of the crafty

Job 34:4

Let us **choose** justice for ourselves; Let us know among ourselves what is good.

Pr 1:29

Because they hated knowledge And did not **choose** the fear of the Lord,

Pr 3:31

Do not envy the oppressor, And **choose** none of his ways;

Pr 12:26

The righteous should **choose** his friends carefully, For the way of the wicked leads them astray.

Isa 7:15

Curds and honey He shall eat, that He may know to refuse the evil and **choose** the good.

Isa 66:4

So will I **choose** their delusions, And bring their fears on them; Because, when I called, no one answered, When I spoke they did not hear; But they did evil before My eyes, And chose that in which I do not delight.”

Php 1:22

But if I live on in the flesh, this will mean fruit from my labor; yet what I shall **choose** I cannot tell.

WE MAKE CHOICES EVERYDAY. SOME OF THEM ARE UNINFORMED, MANY OF THEM ILL-INFORMED. WE KNOW WHEN WE SAY OR DO SOMETHING DELIBERATELY TO HURT OTHERS. THAT IS A CONSCIOUS CHOICE.

WE DO HAVE A CONSCIENCE THAT INFORMS OUR DECISION-MAKING AND IF WE LISTEN TO THAT WE CAN STILL BE A FORCE FOR GOOD IN AN EVIL WORLD BUT, IF WE KEEP IGNORING IT, WE WILL LOSE OUR CONSCIENCE AND BECOME DEPRAVED AND SOCIOPATHIC.

THE MORE WE SIN BY MAKING DELIBERATE CHOICES TO HARM OTHERS BY OUR PRIDE, OUR GREED, OUR SEXUAL DYSFUNCTION, THE MORE WE WILL BRING CONSEQUENCES DOWN ON OURSELVES AND OUR LOVED ONES:

Ho 4:6

My people are destroyed for **lack of knowledge**. Because you have rejected **knowledge**, I also will reject you from being priest for Me; Because you have forgotten the law of your God, I also will forget your children.

THE RIGHT KNOWLEDGE WILL BETTER INFORM OUR DECISIONS. THOSE ENTRUSTED WITH TEACHING THE WORD OF GOD TO HIS PEOPLE AND THE WORLD MUST DO THEIR JOB PROPERLY OR THE JUDGEMENT ON THEIR LIFE WILL BE MORE SEVERE.

IF PEOPLE REJECT THE TRUTH, THAT'S ONE THING. BUT IF THEY ARE NOT TAUGHT THE TRUTH PROPERLY TO BEGIN WITH, THEN THAT'S THE TEACHER'S FAULT.

From Chapter Two

Ps 60:3

You have shown Your people hard things; You have made us drink the wine of **confusion**.

Isa 41:29

Indeed they are all worthless; Their works are nothing; Their molded images are wind and **confusion**.

Isa 45:16

They shall be ashamed And also disgraced, all of them; They shall go in **confusion** together, Who are makers of idols.

De 28:20

"The Lord will send on you cursing, **confusion**, and rebuke in all that you set your hand to do, until you are destroyed and until you perish quickly, because of the wickedness of your doings in which you have forsaken Me.

De 28:28

The Lord will strike you with madness and blindness and **confusion** of heart.

VAIN DISPUTE, POOR DOCTRINE, CONFUSION. THESE ALL EMANATE FROM PRIDE, ARROGANCE AND FEAR. TURF WARS, PROTECTIONISM, SELFISHNESS DO NOT INFORM A DEBATE.

TO TRULY UNDERSTAND ANY SUBJECT BEGINS WITH HUMILITY, QUIETNESS, CAREFUL SUSTAINED STUDY AND TAKING ACCOUNT OF ALL PROOFS FROM REAL LIFE EXPERIENCE, HONEST SCIENTIFIC STUDY AND THE REVEALING OF TRUTH FROM THE WORD OF GOD THAT CANNOT BE OBTAINED BY ANY OTHER MEANS AND THAT DOESN'T CREATE CONTRADICTIONS.

Ec 1:13

And I set my heart to seek and **search** out by **wisdom** concerning all that is done under heaven; this burdensome task God has given to the sons of man, by which they may be exercised.

Ec 7:25

I applied my heart to know, To **search** and seek out **wisdom** and the reason of things, To know the wickedness of folly, Even of foolishness

1 Cor 1:19

For it is written: "I will destroy the **wisdom** of the wise, And bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent."

1 Cor 1:20

Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this age? Has not God made foolish the **wisdom** of this world?

THE CURRENT TEACHING OF THE CHURCH IS THAT FULL HUMAN LIFE BEGINS AT CONCEPTION OR BEGINS AT SOME LATER POINT DURING GESTATION AND PRIOR TO BIRTH.

LET ME BE CLEAR. THIS POSITION CAN BE DEFENDED ONLY IF WE TEAR APART THE BIBLE AND THROW OUT HUGE PORTIONS OF IT AND ARE WILLING TO PUBLICLY CALL GOD A LIAR.

WE WILL ALSO HAVE TO MAKE A PUBLIC DECLARATION THAT THE HOLY BIBLE CANNOT BE TRUSTED AND THAT IT IS FULL OF LIES, DECEPTIONS AND CONTRADICTIONS.

OR:

WE WILL HAVE TO ACCEPT THAT OUR CURRENT TEACHING IS FLAWED, AMBIGUOUS, UNPROVEABLE, SUPERSTITIOUS AND JAM-PACKED FULL OF ERROR.

THE FOLLOWING SCRIPTURES LEAVE NO DOUBT WHATSOEVER THAT FULL HUMAN LIFE DOES NOT BEGIN UNTIL BIRTH AND THE TAKING OF THAT FIRST UNASSISTED BREATH:

Ge 7:22

All in whose nostrils was the **breath of the spirit of life**, all that was on the dry land, died.

NO BREATH, NO LIFE!

Ge 2:7

And the Lord God formed man **of** the dust **of** the ground, and **breathed** into his nostrils the **breath of life**; and man became a living being.

NO BREATH, NO LIFE!

Ge 6:17

And behold, I Myself am bringing floodwaters on the earth, to destroy from under heaven all flesh in which is the **breath of life**; everything that is on the earth shall die.

NO BREATH, NO LIFE!

Ge 7:15

And they went into the ark to Noah, two by two, **of** all flesh in which is the **breath of life**.

NO BREATH OF LIFE, NO LIVING BEING!

Ge 7:22

All in whose nostrils was the **breath of the spirit of life**, all that was on the dry land, died.

NO BREATH, NO SPIRIT!

Job 12:10

In whose hand is the **life of** every living thing, And the **breath of** all mankind?

Job 33:4

The Spirit **of** God has made me, And **the breath of the Almighty gives me life.**

WE'RE NOT TALKING ABOUT AIR, BUT BREATH FROM THE ALMIGHTY WHICH IS SYNONYMOUS WITH THE SPIRIT OF LIFE.

Rev 11:11

Now after the three-and-a-half days the **breath of life** from God entered them, and they stood on their feet, and great fear fell on those who saw them.

NO RESURRECTION WITHOUT THE BREATH OF LIFE WHICH IS ALSO THE SPIRIT OF LIFE.

Eze 37:9

Also He said to me, "Prophecy to the **breath**, prophesy, son **of man**, and say to the **breath**, 'Thus says the Lord God: "Come from the four winds, O **breath**, and **breathe** on these slain, that they may live.'" "

WHAT'S THAT? SEND A COLD WIND TO BLOW OVER SOME CORPSES AND THEY'LL COME ALIVE? OF COURSE NOT.

THIS IS TALKING ABOUT THE SPIRIT OF MAN RE-ENTERING HIS BODY AND BRINGING HIM BACK TO LIFE.

IN THE BIBLE, BREATH AND THE SPIRIT ARE INTERCHANGEABLE. IF THERE IS NO INDEPENDENT, UNASSISTED BREATHING GOING ON, THERE IS NO VIABLE LIFE.

Ps 87:6

The Lord will record, When He registers the peoples: "This one was **born** there." Selah

THERE IS NO BIBLICAL RECOGNITION OF A LIVE PERSON UNTIL THAT PERSON IS BORN.

Ec 3:2

A time to be **born**, And a time to die; A time to plant, And a time to pluck what is planted;

THIS IS A DESCRIPTION OF SOMEONE'S LIFE FROM BIRTH TO DEATH. NOT FROM CONCEPTION TO DEATH.

Jer 1:5

"Before I formed you in the womb I knew you; Before you were **born** I sanctified you; I ordained you a prophet to the nations."

HE KNOWS OUR SPIRIT BEFORE WE RECEIVE OUR VESSEL (BODY). HE ALREADY PRE-ORDAINED WHAT THE TALENTS, GIFTS AND CALLINGS OF THIS SPIRIT WOULD BE. NOT THE BODY, THE SPIRIT, THE INDIVIDUAL!!

Joh 1:13

who were **born**, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

GOD DICTATES THE TIMING OF OUR SPIRITUAL BIRTH WHEN WE RECEIVE THE HOLY SPIRIT. OUR PHYSICAL BIRTH BRINGS UNDERSTANDING AND AWARENESS OF THE NATURAL WORLD AND THE THINGS OF THE FLESH.

OUR SPIRITUAL BIRTH BRINGS UNDERSTANDING AND AWARENESS OF THE SUPERNATURAL AND THE THINGS OF GOD.

Joh 3:3

Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is **born** again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

JESUS CONSTANTLY USES THE ANALOGY OF BIRTH TO ILLUSTRATE A BEGINNING, NOT CONCEPTION OR GESTATION, BUT BIRTH!

Joh 3:4

Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be **born** when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be **born**?"

Joh 3:5

Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is **born** of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God."

Joh 3:6

That which is **born** of the flesh is flesh, and that which is **born** of the Spirit is spirit.

Joh 3:7

Do not marvel that I said to you, "You must be **born** again."

Joh 3:8

The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is **born** of the Spirit."

Joh 16:21

A woman, when she is in labor, has sorrow because her hour has come; but as soon as she has given birth to the child, she no longer remembers the anguish, for joy that a human being has been **born** into the world.

ALL MOTHERS KNOW THAT THEY DO NOT BECOME MOTHERS UNTIL THEIR CHILD HAS BEEN BORN. EVERYTHING BEFORE THAT IS ALL ABOUT EXPECTANCY.

Ac 22:28

The commander answered, "With a large sum I obtained this citizenship." And Paul said, "But I was **born** a citizen."

EVEN IN ROMAN TIMES, CITIZENSHIP WAS NOT CONFERRED UNTIL A LIVE BIRTH HAD TAKEN PLACE. PREGNANCY NEVER CONFERRED CITIZENSHIP RIGHTS ONTO A FOETUS.

Heb 11:12

Therefore from one man, and him as good as dead, were **born** as many

as the stars of the sky in multitude – innumerable as the sand which is by the seashore.

GOD COUNTS ONLY THOSE THAT HAVE BEEN BORN. HE DOESN'T COUNT ALL THE FOETUSES THAT WERE CONCEIVED.

1 Jo 4:7

Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is **born** of God and knows God

CHRISTIANS WHO LOVE ONE ANOTHER ARE LIVING PROOF OF HAVING BEEN BORN OF GOD. JUST AS THOSE WHO BREATHE ARE LIVING PROOF OF HAVING BEEN BORN OF MAN.

Rev 12:4

His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was **born**.

EVEN SATAN IS NOT CHALLENGED BY POTENTIAL LIFE IN THE WOMB, HE SEEKS TO DESTROY ONLY ONCE THE CHILD HAS BEEN BROUGHT FORTH. NO BIRTH, NO BREATH, NO LIFE!

SO WHEN DOES HUMAN LIFE BEGIN?

PHYSICALLY, THE ANSWER IS AT CONCEPTION.

BUT A HUMAN BEING IS MORE THAN JUST A PHYSICAL ENTITY, HE IS ALSO A SPIRIT THAT EMPOWERS HIM WITH SELF AWARENESS, INTELLIGENCE, SPECIAL GIFTS AND CREATIVITY.

SO DOES THE SPIRIT OF MAN ENTER AT CONCEPTION?

NO, THE SPIRIT ENTERS AT BIRTH. THE DEFINITION OF BIRTH MUST BE A VIABLE UNIT OF SELF-CONTAINED LIFE, UNASSISTED IN BREATHING AND HEART AND BRAIN FUNCTION.

ONCE THE UMBILICAL CORD IS CUT AND THE BABY BEGINS TO BREATHE ON HIS OWN, UNASSISTED, YOU THEN HAVE A VIABLE PHYSICAL LIFE FORM THAT WILL RECEIVE ITS SPIRIT AT THAT FIRST BREATH.

REMEMBER ADAM WAS FULLY FORMED BEFORE HE RECEIVED THE "BREATH OF LIFE"!

Ge 25:21

Now Isaac pleaded with the Lord for his wife, because she was barren; and the Lord granted his plea, and Rebekah his wife **conceived**.

SOME WILL TAKE THIS VERSE AND ARGUE THAT ALL CONCEPTIONS COME FROM GOD. BUT THAT IS NOT WHAT HAPPENED. ALL WOMEN SHOULD BE ABLE TO GET PREGNANT BUT IF THE MAN CANNOT PRODUCE GOOD SPERM, OR THE WOMAN'S FALLOPIAN TUBE IS BLOCKED OR A THOUSAND OTHER PHYSICAL ELEMENTS ARE NOT PROPERLY IN PLACE, PREGNANCY WILL NOT HAPPEN.

ANY PHYSICAL DEFECT IN OUR REPRODUCTIVE ORGANS OR MENTAL OR PHYSICAL DEFECT OF ANY KIND HAS ITS ROOTS IN OUR SINFUL NATURE. WHEN ISAAC PLEADED WITH GOD, HE HEALED REBECCA ENABLING HER TO CONCEIVE. THE BIBLE PROVES THIS EXPLANATION IN GEN20:17

2 Ki 4:17

But the woman **conceived**, and bore a son when the appointed time had come, of which Elisha had told her.

1 Ch 7:23

And when he went in to his wife, she **conceived** and bore a son; and he called his name Beriah, because tragedy had come upon his house.

IT ONLY BECOMES NOTEWORTHY IN THE BIBLE TO MENTION CONCEPTION WHEN THAT NEWS IS IMMEDIATELY FOLLOWED BY THE ANNOUNCEMENT OF A LIVE BIRTH. THROUGHOUT THE WORLD TODAY, IN ALMOST EVERY CULTURE, WE CELEBRATE OUR BIRTH DAY. WE DON'T CELEBRATE THE DAY OF OUR CONCEPTION.

Jas 1:15

Then, when desire has **conceived**, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth death.

IT'S PRETTY OBVIOUS, WHEN THE BIBLE USES THE TERM CONCEIVED, THAT IT'S REFERRING TO AN EXPECTED EVENT. UNTIL CONCEPTION GIVES WAY TO BIRTH, IT REMAINS AN UNREALISED EXPECTATION. WE PLANT A TREE, EXPECTING APPLES. BUT THAT EXPECTATION DEPENDS ON FULL GROWTH, BUDDING AND FINALLY FRUIT.

IN THE WEST WE HAVE A SAYING, "DON'T COUNT OUR CHICKENS BEFORE THEY'RE HATCHED." WE MAY HAVE TEN EGGS AND ONLY END UP WITH TWO CHICKENS. DO WE MOURN THE LOSS OF EIGHT CHICKENS? OF COURSE WE DON'T. WE HOPED FOR TEN BUT IN THE END WE ONLY GOT TWO. WE CAN'T MOURN THE LOSS OF SOMETHING WE NEVER HAD.

A MISCARRIAGE IS AN UNREALISED EXPECTATION, NOT A LOST LIFE. PRUNE THE BUD OFF AN APPLE TREE AND YOU HAVEN'T LOST THE APPLE, JUST THE HOPE OF HAVING A FUTURE APPLE.

THE WASTE PRODUCT OF A MISCARRIAGE OR ABORTION ARE COMPONENTS OF THE FLESH THAT NEVER HOUSED A LIFE-GIVING SPIRIT. THE MOMENT THE FOETUS IS DISCONNECTED FROM THE LIFE-GIVING SOURCE OF THE MOTHER, IT DIES BECAUSE IT DOESN'T HAVE ITS OWN LIFE FORCE. JUST AS WHEN A SURGEON DISCONNECTS A KIDNEY FROM THE PATIENT, THE KIDNEY DIES BECAUSE IT DOESN'T HAVE ITS OWN LIFE FORCE.

THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH HAS DONE IMMENSE HARM TO PROSPECTIVE PARENTS BY INSISTING THAT A FULL HUMAN LIFE HAS BEEN LOST WHEN THERE HAS BEEN A MISCARRIAGE OR AN ABORTION. WE HAVE EXACERBATED THEIR MISERY AND MULTIPLIED THEIR DISTRESS BECAUSE OF OUR IGNORANCE, OUR SUPERSTITION AND OUR ARROGANCE.

ON THIS ISSUE AND MANY OTHERS WE HAVE A LOT OF APOLOGISING TO DO.

From Chapter Three

AS THESE SCRIPTURES CLEARLY SHOW, THE BUCK STOPS WITH THE MAN ON EVERY ISSUE IN LIFE. THE WEAKNESS OF MAN DESTROYS HIS WIFE AND HIS FAMILY AND THE DEFINITION OF A COWARD IS A MAN WHO REFUSES TO TAKE RESPONSIBILITY FOR HIS ACTIONS OR BLAMES THE CONSEQUENCES OF HIS STUPIDITY ON OTHERS, ESPECIALLY ON WOMEN:

1 Tim 5:8

But if anyone does not **provide** for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.

Ge 3:16

To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your **husband**, And he shall rule over you."

THE MASSIVE CONSEQUENCES OF THIS TERRIBLE CURSE ON ALL WOMEN ARE GRAPHICALLY ILLUSTRATED IN CHAPTER FOUR

Nu 5:29

This is the law of jealousy, when a wife, while under her **husband's** authority, goes astray and defiles herself,

THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE LAW AS IT'S GIVEN TO ISRAEL, CLEARLY ENDORSES THE EFFECTS OF THE CURSE AS IT RELATES TO THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN MEN AND WOMEN. UNDER THE LAW, WOMEN DO NOT HAVE EQUALITY WITH MEN. THEY ARE SUBJECT TO THE MALE, WHAT HE SAYS, WHAT HE DOES, WHETHER RIGHT OR WRONG, WHETHER JUST OR UNJUST, SHE IS IN THE POSITION OF SUBJUGATION WHETHER SHE LIKES IT OR NOT. THIS DOESN'T JUST EXTEND TO PHYSICAL DOMINANCE, IT ALSO INCLUDES A WOMAN'S STATE OF MIND.

THE ONLY WOMEN NOT SUBJECT TO THIS UNFORTUNATE STATE ARE THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN RELEASED FROM THE CONSTRAINTS OF THE LAW BY GRACE, WHO HAVE ACCEPTED THE LORDSHIP OF CHRIST OVER THEIR LIVES AND ARE IN FELLOWSHIP WITH GOD THE FATHER THROUGH THE INDWELLING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. THESE WOMEN ARE THE MOST BLESSED OF ALL WOMEN ON THE EARTH.

Nu 30:6

If indeed she takes a **husband**, while bound by her vows or by a rash utterance from her lips by which she bound herself,

Nu 30:8

But if her **husband** overrules her on the day that he hears it, he shall make void her vow which she took and what she uttered with her lips, by which she bound herself, and the Lord will release her.

UNDER THE LAW, A WOMAN'S HUSBAND CAN EVEN OVERTURN HER VOWS

Nu 30:13

Every vow and every binding oath to afflict her soul, her husband may confirm it, or her husband may make it void.

EVEN IN MATTERS OF TRADITIONAL WORSHIP, A WOMAN'S INTENT CAN BE OVER-RULED BY HER HUSBAND.

Eph 5:23

For the husband is **head** of the **wife**, as also Christ is **head** of the church; and He is the Savior of the body.

THE CONFIRMATION IS EVERYWHERE THAT THE HUSBAND HAS AUTHORITY OVER THE WIFE. WHAT HE SAYS AND DOES DIRECTLY AFFECTS HER. BUT WITH AUTHORITY COMES ACCOUNTABILITY AND A MAN WILL PAY DEARLY FOR ABUSING THOSE UNDER HIS AUTHORITY.

Eph 5:33

Nevertheless **let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself**, and let the wife see that she respects her **husband**.

Eph 5:29

For no **one** ever hated his own **flesh**, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church.

WOULD YOU BEAT YOURSELF UP? WOULD YOU SWALLOW A BOTTLE OF BLEACH? IF HUSBANDS KNOW HOW NOT TO HARM THEMSELVES, THEN THEY SHOULD REALISE THAT ANY FORM OF HARM: PHYSICAL, PSYCHOLOGICAL, VERBAL,

ABUSE OF TRUST, TOWARD THEIR WIFE WILL COME BACK ON THEM A HUNDRED-FOLD. YES HUSBANDS HAVE AUTHORITY BUT, THEY TOO ARE UNDER AUTHORITY:

1 Cor 11:3

But I want you to know that the **head** of every man is Christ, the **head** of **woman** is man, and the **head** of Christ is God.

Ro 7:2

For the woman who has a **husband** is bound by the law to her **husband** as long as he lives. But if the **husband** dies, she is released from the law of her **husband**.

1 Cor 7:4

The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the **husband** does. And likewise the **husband** does not have authority over his own body, but the wife does.

1 Cor 7:14

For the unbelieving **husband** is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the **husband**; otherwise your children would be unclean, but now they are holy.

Ga 6:7

Do not be deceived, God is not **mocked**; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.

NO BOYFRIENDS, NO GIRLFRIENDS. UNDER THE LAW, THE CONSTRAINTS OF MARRIAGE BELONG TO ALL WHO PARTICIPATE IN SEXUAL UNITY. TEN SEXUAL PARTNERS? WELL THEN, YOU'VE HAD TEN HUSBANDS IF YOU'RE THAT WOMAN OR TEN WIVES IF YOU'RE THAT MAN

Ge 2:24

Therefore a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and they shall become **one flesh**.

Mt 19:

⁵ and said, "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become **one flesh**"?

⁶ So then, they are no longer two but **one flesh**. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate."

Mr 10:8

and the two shall become **one flesh**'; so then they are no longer two, but **one flesh**.

1 Co 6:16

Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is **one** body with her? For "the two," He says, "shall become **one flesh**."

1 Cor 6:18

Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body, but he who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body.

UNDER THE LAW, INTERCOURSE ONLY BELONGS IN MARRIAGE. IF INTERCOURSE IS PRACTISED IN ANY EVENT, OTHER THAN FORCIBLE RAPE, MARRIAGE IS ASSUMED. SO, EVEN IF THIS EVENT ONLY LASTS FOR ONE NIGHT AND THE MAN AND THE WOMAN GO THEIR SEPARATE WAYS, THEN DIVORCE IS PRACTISED AND THE CONSEQUENCES OF DIVORCE ARE VISITED UPON BOTH PARTICIPANTS.

De 22:19

and they shall fine him one hundred shekels of silver and give them to the father of the young woman, because he has brought a bad name on a virgin of Israel. And she shall be his wife; he cannot **divorce** her all his days.

De 22:29

then the man who lay with her shall give to the young woman's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife because he has humbled her; he shall not be permitted to **divorce** her all his days.

Mal 2:16

"For the Lord God of Israel says That He hates **divorce**, For it covers one's garment with violence," Says the Lord of hosts. "Therefore take heed to your spirit, That you do not deal treacherously."

Mat 19:3–12

³ The Pharisees also came to Him, testing Him, and saying to Him, “Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for just any reason?”

⁴ And He answered and said to them, “Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning ‘made them male and female,’

⁵ and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’?

⁶ So then, they are no longer two but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate.”

⁷ They said to Him, “Why then did Moses command to give a certificate of divorce, and to put her away?”

⁸ **He said to them, “Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, permitted you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.**

⁹ And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, and marries another, commits adultery; and whoever marries her who is divorced commits adultery.”

SO WHAT ARE THE CONSEQUENCES OF THE ADULTERY THAT FOLLOWS THESE ACTIONS?

Ex 20:14

You shall not commit **adultery**.

Le 20:10

The man who commits **adultery** with another man’s wife, he who commits **adultery** with his neighbor’s wife, **the adulterer and the adulteress, shall surely be put to death.**

De 5:18

You shall not commit **adultery**.

Pr 6:32

Whoever commits **adultery** with a woman lacks understanding; He who does so destroys his own soul

Mat 15:

¹⁶ So Jesus said, “Are you also still without understanding?”

¹⁷ Do you not yet understand that whatever enters the mouth goes into the stomach and is eliminated?

¹⁸ But those things which proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and they defile a man.

¹⁹ **For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies.**

²⁰ These are the things which defile a man, but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile a man."

Gal 5:

¹⁹ **Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness,**

²⁰ idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies,

²¹ envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like; of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

De 28:61

Also every **sickness** and every plague, which is not written in this Book of the Law, will the Lord bring upon you until you are destroyed.

EVERYTHING THAT PERTAINS TO WRONGFUL ACTS WHETHER THEY BE SEXUAL OR VIOLENT BEGINS WITH INTERNAL DESIRE. AS SOON AS WE GIVE IN TO THAT WE COMMENCE A CHAIN OF CONSEQUENCES THAT ULTIMATELY LEADS TO ACTUAL PHYSICAL DEATH FOR SOMEONE WITH LOADS OF MISERY IN-BETWEEN.

FOR ALL HUMAN BEINGS, JESUS CHRIST IS OUR BEST AND ONLY HOPE, FOR DELIVERANCE FROM TEMPTATION, AND SUFFERING. ULTIMATELY, HEALING WILL FOLLOW IF WE COMPLETE THE PROCESS OF REPENTANCE.

From Chapter Four

ALL HUMANITY IS SUBJECT TO THE LAWS OF GOD. THEY HAVE ALWAYS EXISTED AND APPLY TO EVERYBODY, JUST AS GRAVITY DOES. A MULTITUDE OF CURSES AWAIT THOSE WHO DEFY THESE LAWS.

ALL THE SUFFERING WE KNOW ABOUT FROM HISTORY AND THE SUFFERING WE SEE IN OUR PRESENT WORLD ORIGINATE FROM THE CURSE OF LAW-BREAKING. WE PILE UP THE CONSEQUENCES OVER TIME UNTIL EVENTUALLY IT OVERTAKES US AND DESTROYS US.

TO HELP US UNDERSTAND THE LAW, GOD GAVE US THE TEN COMMANDMENTS THROUGH THE NATION OF ISRAEL. THIS HELPS US UNDERSTAND WHAT OUR PRIORITIES SHOULD BE IN TERMS OF THE GOVERNMENT OF NATIONS AND PERSONAL RESPONSIBILITY:

Exodus 20

¹ And God spoke all these words, saying:

² "I am the Lord your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

³ You shall have no other gods before Me.

⁴ "You shall not make for yourself a carved image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth;

⁵ you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers on the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me,

⁶ but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments.

⁷ "You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain, for the Lord will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain.

⁸ "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.

⁹ Six days you shall labor and do all your work,

¹⁰ but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord your God. In it you shall do no work: you, nor your son, nor your daughter, nor your male servant, nor your female servant, nor your cattle, nor your stranger who is within your gates.

¹¹ For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.

¹² "Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be long upon the land which the Lord your God is giving you.

¹³ "You shall not murder.

¹⁴ "You shall not commit adultery.

¹⁵ "You shall not steal.

¹⁶ "You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.

¹⁷ "You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbor's."

Mt 22:

³⁷ Jesus said to him, "'You shall **love the Lord your God** with all **your** heart, with all **your** soul, and with all **your** mind.'"

³⁸ This is the first and great commandment.

³⁹ And the second is like it: You shall love your neighbour as yourself.

⁴⁰ On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.

Mr 12:

³⁰ And you shall **love the Lord your God** with all **your** heart, with all **your** soul, with all **your** mind, and with all **your** strength.' This is **the** first commandment.

³¹ And the second like it is this: "You shall love your neighbour as yourself." There is no other commandment greater than these.

Lu 10:27

So he answered and said, "'You shall **love the Lord your God** with all **your** heart, with all **your** soul, with all **your** strength, and with all **your** mind,' and '**your** neighbor as yourself.'"

THIS MESSAGE IS DISPLAYED THROUGHOUT THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENTS THAT WITHOUT GOD INFLUENCING OUR LIVES AND GUIDING ALL OUR MORAL CHOICES WE OPEN OURSELVES UP TO BEING LED ASTRAY BY THE ENEMY OF BOTH GOD AND MAN.

THIS AFFECTS OUR GOVERNMENT, OUR BUSINESS ACTIVITIES, OUR FAMILIES, OUR LEISURE PURSUITS, OUR HEALTH, OUR PROSPERITY AND OUR SAFETY.

IT ALSO AFFECTS THE ANIMALS, THE BIRDS OF THE AIR, THE FISH IN THE SEA, THE CLIMATE, THE WEATHER, OUR FOOD SUPPLY, OUR WATER, EVEN THE AIR WE BREATHE.

IT ALSO AFFECTS OUR RELATIONSHIPS WITH EVERYONE ELSE, INCLUDING OUR OWN CHILDREN. IT AFFECTS OUR TALENTS, OUR ABILITIES, OUR PHYSICAL STRENGTH AND OUR CAPACITY TO THINK REASONABLY AND SENSIBLY.

EVERYTHING WE HAVE AND EVERYTHING WE ARE ORIGINATES FROM GOD. OUR FAILURE TO ACKNOWLEDGE THIS AND CONSIDER HIS WAYS WILL LEAD US INTO ERROR AND PERSONAL AND CORPORATE DISASTER.

De 28:1

Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the Lord your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the Lord your God will set you high above all **nations** of the earth.

De 28:12

The Lord will open to you His good treasure, the heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. You shall lend to many **nations**, but you shall not borrow.

De 30:

¹⁰ "if you obey the voice of the Lord your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which are written in this Book of the Law, and if you turn to the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul.

¹¹ "For this commandment which I command you today is not too mysterious for you, nor is it far off.

¹² "It is not in heaven, that you should say, 'Who will ascend into heaven for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?'

¹³ "Nor is it beyond the sea, that you should say, 'Who will go over the sea for us and bring it to us, that we may hear it and do it?'

¹⁴ "But the word is very near you, in your mouth and in your heart, that you may do it.

¹⁵ "See, I have set before you today life and good, death and evil,

¹⁶ "in that I command you today to love the Lord your God, to walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments, His statutes, and His judgements, that you may live and multiply; and the Lord your God will bless you in the land which you go to possess.

¹⁷ “But if your heart turns away so that you do not hear, and are drawn away, and worship other gods and serve them,

¹⁸ “I announce to you today that you shall surely perish; you shall not prolong your days in the land which you cross over the Jordan to go in and possess.

¹⁹ **“I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore choose life, that both you and your descendants may live;**

²⁰ “that you may love the Lord your God, that you may obey His voice, and that you may cling to Him, for He is your life and the length of your days; and that you may dwell in the land which the Lord swore to your fathers, to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give them.”

THE ORIGINAL NATION OF ISRAEL AND ALL HER DESCENDANTS LIVING IN THE WORLD TODAY WERE SUPPOSED TO LIVE ACCORDING TO THE WAYS OF GOD AND SET AN EXAMPLE FOR THE REST OF THE WORLD TO FOLLOW:

THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH HAS NOW ADOPTED THAT MANTLE AND EVERY CHRISTIAN MAN AND WOMAN ON THE PLANET IS SUPPOSED TO BE A LIVING WITNESS AS TO WHAT GOD CAN DO WITH A PERSON THAT IS SUBMITTED TO HIS WILL, SAVED FROM HIS SINFUL LIFE THROUGH JESUS CHRIST AND EMPOWERED TO LIVE A RIGHT-THINKING, RIGHT-DOING LIFE BY THE PRESENCE OF GOD WITHIN THEM.

Mt 5:16

Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your **good works** and glorify your Father in heaven.

Ro 13:3

For rulers are not a terror to **good works**, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is **good**, and you will have praise from the same.

1 Tim 4:12

Let no one despise your youth, but be an **example** to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

Tit 2:7

in all things showing yourself to be a pattern of **good works**; in doctrine showing integrity, reverence, incorruptibility,

Tit 2:14

who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from every lawless deed and purify for Himself His own special people, zealous for **good works**.

Tit 3:8

This is a faithful saying, and these things I want you to affirm constantly, that those who have believed in God should be careful to maintain **good works**. These things are **good** and profitable to men.

Tit 3:14

And let our people also learn to maintain **good works**, to meet urgent needs, that they may not be unfruitful.

Heb 10:24

And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and **good works**,

Jas 3:13

Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show by **good** conduct that his **works** are done in the meekness of wisdom.

1 Pe 2:12

having your conduct honorable among the unbelievers, that when they speak against you as evildoers, they may, by your **good works** which they observe, glorify God in the day of visitation.

IT IS RIGHT THAT ALL CHRISTIANS SHOULD BE HELD TO A MUCH HIGHER STANDARD THAN ANYBODY ELSE. NOT JUST IN TERMS OF HONESTY, SEXUAL PURITY AND RELIABILITY BUT ALSO IN HOW WE RESPOND TO THOSE WHO SEEK TO WRONG US IN SOME WAY.

Mat 5:

⁴³ "You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.'

⁴⁴“But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you,

⁴⁵“that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust.

⁴⁶“For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same?

⁴⁷“And if you greet your brethren only, what do you do more than others? Do not even the tax collectors do so?

⁴⁸“Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.”

UNTIL THE WORLD IS IN AGREEMENT WITH GOD, NOT ONLY WILL WE NOT SEE THE UTOPIA AND PEACE WE ALL YEARN FOR, BUT NEITHER WILL WE BE ABLE TO ACCESS THE THINGS THAT GOD ULTIMATELY HAS PLANNED FOR MANKIND:

1 Cor 2:9

But as it is written: **“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, Nor have entered into the heart of man The things which God has prepared for those who love Him.”**

Ps 8:

³When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, The moon and the stars, which You have ordained,

⁴What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him?

⁵For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honor.

⁶You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet.

Heb 2:8

You have put **all things** in subjection **under his feet.**” For in that He put **all** in subjection **under** him, He left nothing that is not put **under** him. **But now we do not yet see all things put under him.**

ACCOUNTABILITY IS WRITTEN INTO THE FABRIC OF LIFE. THE LEVEL OF ACCOUNTABILITY IS FAR GREATER THAN MOST MEN REALISE:

Mt 12:36 – Show Context

But I say to you that for **every** idle **word** men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgement.

THE ORIGIN OF LUST BEGINS IN THE SPIRIT OF A MAN, RATHER THAN ADMIT THAT AND DEAL WITH IT, WE PURSUE IT AND INDULGE IT AND THEREBY DEVASTATE THE LIVES OF OTHERS:

Jas 4:

¹ **Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure that war in your members?**

² You lust and do not have. You murder and covet and cannot obtain. You fight and war. Yet you do not have because you do not ask.

³ You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures.

⁴ Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

⁵ Or do you think that the Scripture says in vain, “The Spirit who dwells in us yearns jealously”?

⁶ But He gives more grace. Therefore He says: “God resists the proud, But gives grace to the humble.”

⁷ Therefore submit to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.

⁸ Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners; and purify your hearts, you double-minded.

⁹ Lament and mourn and weep! Let your laughter be turned to mourning and your joy to gloom.

¹⁰ Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up.

WOMEN HAVE SUFFERED TERRIBLY BECAUSE OF THE HEART DISEASE SO PREVALENT IN THE WORLD OF MEN:

Ro 2:5

But in accordance with your **hardness** and your impenitent **heart** you are treasuring up for yourself wrath in the day **of** wrath and revelation **of** the righteous judgement **of** God,

MEN WHO MAKE THE EFFORT TO UNDERSTAND AND EMPATHISE WITH THE WOMEN IN THEIR LIFE, ESPECIALLY THEIR WIFE, WILL DISCOVER NEW AND AMAZING DEPTHS TO THE WONDERFUL CREATION THAT IS EVE:

Ge 1:

²⁶ Then God said, **“Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness;** let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.”

²⁷ **So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.**

Ge 5:

¹ This is the book of the genealogy of Adam. **In the day that God created man, He made him in the likeness of God.**

² **He created them male and female,** and blessed them and called them Mankind in the day they were created.

Pr 18:22

He who **finds a wife finds a good thing,** And obtains favor from the Lord.

1 Pe 3:7

Husbands, likewise, **dwell** with them with **understanding,** giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.

Col 3:

¹⁹ **Husbands, love your wives and do not be bitter toward them.**

²⁵ But he who does wrong will be repaid for what he has done, and there is no partiality.

THE FOLLOWING VERSES RELATE TO THE CURSE THAT WAS INCURRED BY EVE AT THE TIME OF THE GREAT FALL AND NOW AFFECTS EVERY WOMAN ON THE PLANET EXCEPT THOSE THAT HAVE BEEN RELEASED:

Ge 3:

¹ Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the

Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?"

² And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden;

³ but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.' "

⁴ Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die.

⁵ For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."

⁶ So when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate.

⁷ Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings.

⁸ And they heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden.

⁹ Then the Lord God called to Adam and said to him, "Where are you?"

¹⁰ So he said, "I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; and I hid myself."

¹¹ And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you that you should not eat?"

¹² Then the man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I ate."

¹³ And the Lord God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

¹⁴ So the Lord God said to the serpent: "Because you have done this, You are cursed more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you shall go, And you shall eat dust All the days of your life.

¹⁵ And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, And you shall bruise His heel."

¹⁶ To the woman He said: "I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; In pain you shall bring forth children; Your desire shall be for your husband, And he shall rule over you."

¹⁷ Then to Adam He said, "Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying,

'You shall not eat of it': "Cursed is the ground for your sake; In toil you shall eat of it All the days of your life.

¹⁸ Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, And you shall eat the herb of the field.

¹⁹ In the sweat of your face you shall eat bread Till you return to the ground, For out of it you were taken; For dust you are, And to dust you shall return."

²⁰ And Adam called his wife's name Eve, because she was the mother of all living.

²¹ Also for Adam and his wife the Lord God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.

²² Then the Lord God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever"

²³ therefore the Lord God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken.

²⁴ So He drove out the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.

IT IS NOT MY ASSIGNMENT TO GO INTO PROPHETIC DETAIL ABOUT WHAT IS TO HAPPEN TO THE NATIONS OF PROMISE OTHER THAN WHAT IS WRITTEN IN THE LAST CHAPTER.

THIS NEXT SET OF SCRIPTURES DEALS WITH THE ISSUES RAISED IN THIS PARTICULAR CHAPTER WHERE SOME OF THE NATIONS OF PROMISE HAVE CHEERFULLY COMPROMISED THEIR BELIEFS AND RESPONSIBILITIES TO ACCOMMODATE THE STRANGE AND CRUEL PRACTISES OF OTHER PEOPLE. MOSTLY FOR THE PURPOSES OF PROFIT AND FALSE PEACE.

Ho 5:3

I know **Ephraim**, And Israel is not hidden from Me; For now, O **Ephraim**, you commit harlotry; Israel is defiled

Ho 5:11

Ephraim is oppressed and broken in judgement, Because he willingly walked by human precept

Ho 7:8

Ephraim has mixed himself among the peoples; **Ephraim** is a cake unturned.

Ho 7:11

Ephraim also is like a silly dove, without sense – They call to Egypt, They go to Assyria.

Ho 8:9

For they have gone up to Assyria, Like a wild donkey alone by itself; **Ephraim** has hired lovers.

Ho 8:11

Because **Ephraim** has made many altars for sin, They have become for him altars for sinning.

Ho 9:3

They shall not dwell in the Lord's land, But **Ephraim** shall return to Egypt, And shall eat unclean things in Assyria

IT'S A PRETTY AMAZING STATEMENT TO SAY THAT PEOPLE WHO HAVE BEEN AFFLICTED IN THIS WAY CAN BE HEALED, BUT THEY CAN. THOSE, TO WHOM IT HAS BEEN GIVEN, WILL KNOW WHAT TO DO FOR THESE PEOPLE. THE FOLLOWING SCRIPTURES MERELY CONFIRM THIS:

Isa 61:1

"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me, Because the Lord has anointed Me To preach good tidings to the poor; He has sent Me to **heal** the brokenhearted, To proclaim liberty to the captives, And the opening of the prison to those who are bound;"

Jer 33:6

Behold, I will bring it **health** and **healing**; I will **heal** them and reveal to them the abundance of peace and truth.

Ho 6:1

Come, and let us return to the Lord; For He has torn, but He will **heal** us; He has stricken, but He will bind us up.

Mt 10:1

And when He had called His twelve disciples to Him, He gave them power over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to **heal** all kinds of sickness and all kinds of disease.

Mt 10:8

Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.

Acts 4

²⁹ Now, Lord, look on their threats, and grant to Your servants that with all boldness they may speak Your word,

³⁰ **by stretching out Your hand to heal, and that signs and wonders may be done through the name of Your holy Servant Jesus.**

CONCEPTION IS NOT ALWAYS CONSIDERED A BLESSING BY WOMEN AND THE BIBLE AGREES

Ga 4:27

For it is written: "Rejoice, O barren, You who do not bear! Break forth and shout, You who are not in labor! For the desolate has many more children Than she who has a **husband**."

Mr 13:17

But woe to those who are **pregnant** and to those who are nursing babies in those days!

Lu 21:23

But woe to those who are **pregnant** and to those who are nursing babies in those days! For there will be great distress in the land and wrath upon this people.

ONE OF THE BLESSINGS THAT WOMEN CAN LOOK FORWARD TO:

Ro 6:18

And having been set free from sin, you became slaves of righteousness.

Ro 8:

¹ There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus,* who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

² For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death.

Ga 3:10

For as many as are **of the works of the law** are under **the curse**; for it is written, "**Cursed** is everyone who does not continue in all things which are written in **the book of the law**, to do **them**."

Ga 3:13

Christ has redeemed us from **the curse of the law**, having become a **curse** for us (for it is written, "**Cursed** is everyone who hangs on a tree"),

1 Tim 2:

⁹ in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing,

¹⁰ but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works.

¹¹ Let a woman learn in silence with all submission.

¹² And I do not permit a woman to teach or to have authority over a man, but to be in silence.

¹³ For Adam was formed first, then Eve.

¹⁴ And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression.

¹⁵ **Nevertheless she will be saved in childbearing if they continue in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control.**

WOMEN MUST STOP THEIR WORSHIP OF MEN

Ps 55:23

But You, O God, shall bring them down to the pit of destruction;
Bloodthirsty and deceitful **men** shall not live out half their days; But I will **trust** in You.

Ps 118:8

It is better to **trust in** the Lord Than to put confidence **in man**.

Ps 146:3

Do not put your **trust in princes**, Nor **in a son of man**, in whom there is no help.

Pr 25:19

Confidence in an unfaithful man in time of trouble Is like a bad tooth and a foot out of joint.

1 Ki 9:

⁶ But if you or your sons at all turn from following Me, and do not keep My commandments and My statutes which I have set before you, but go and serve other gods and worship them,

⁷ then I will cut off Israel from the land which I have given them; and this house which I have consecrated for My name I will cast out of My sight. Israel will be a proverb and a byword among all peoples.

⁸ And as for this house, which is exalted, everyone who passes by it will be astonished and will hiss, and say, 'Why has the Lord done thus to this land and to this house?'

⁹ Then they will answer, 'Because they forsook the Lord their God, who brought their fathers out of the land of Egypt, and have embraced other gods, and worshipped them and served them; therefore the Lord has brought all this calamity on them.'”

Jer 25:6

Do not go after other gods to serve them and **worship** them, and do not provoke **Me** to anger with the works of your hands; and I will not harm you.'

Lu 4:7

Therefore, if You will **worship** before **me**, all will be Yours.”

Lu 4:8

And Jesus answered and said to him, “Get behind **Me**, Satan! For it is written, ‘You shall **worship** the Lord your God, and Him only you shall serve.’”

John 4:

¹⁹ The woman said to Him, “Sir, I perceive that You are a prophet.

²⁰ Our fathers worshipped on this mountain, and you Jews say that in Jerusalem is the place where one ought to worship."

²¹ **Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe Me, the hour is coming when you will neither on this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, worship the Father.**

²² You worship what you do not know; we know what we worship, for salvation is of the Jews.

²³ But the hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the Father is seeking such to worship Him.

²⁴ God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."

Rev 19:10

And I fell at his feet to **worship** him. But he said to **me**, "See that you do not do that! I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. **Worship** God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

1 Pe 3:7

Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being **heirs together** of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.

IT IS RIGHT THAT WOMEN SHOULD TEACH CHILDREN AND OTHER YOUNG WOMEN BUT SHOULD NOT BE INVOLVED IN THE PUBLIC TEACHING OF MEN.

1 Tim 2:12

And I do not permit a **woman to teach** or to have authority over a man, but to be in silence.

Tit 2:

¹ But as for you, speak the things which are proper for sound doctrine:

² that the older men be sober, reverent, temperate, sound in faith, in love, in patience;

³ **the older women likewise, that they be reverent in behavior, not slanderers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things –**

⁴ that they admonish the young women to love their husbands, to love their children,

⁵ to be discreet, chaste, homemakers, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God may not be blasphemed.

SUBMIT TO ONE ANOTHER, LET HUSBANDS LOVE THEIR WIVES AS CHRIST LOVES THE CHURCH

Eph 5:

²¹ submitting to one another in the fear of God.

²² **Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord.**

²³ For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body.

²⁴ Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything.

²⁵ Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her,

²⁶ that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word,

²⁷ that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish.

²⁸ So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself.

²⁹ For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church.

³⁰ For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones.

³¹ "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh."

³² This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

³³ Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she respects her husband.

John 13:

¹² **So when He had washed their feet, taken His garments, and sat down again, He said to them, "Do you know what I have done to you?"**

¹³ You call me Teacher and Lord, and you say well, for so I am.

¹⁴ If I then, your Lord and Teacher, have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet.

¹⁵ For I have given you an example, that you should do as I have done to you.

¹⁶ Most assuredly, I say to you, a servant is not greater than his master; nor is he who is sent greater than he who sent him.

¹⁷ If you know these things, blessed are you if you do them

IS THIS YOUR HUSBAND? IN THIS CONTEXT, WE'RE TALKING ABOUT ONE OF THE LEADERS IN THE CHURCH BUT THESE QUALITIES ARE ENTIRELY CONSISTENT WITH LEADERSHIP IN THE HOME:

1 Tim 3:

¹ This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work.

² **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach;**

³ not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous;

⁴ one who rules his own house well, having his children in submission with all reverence

⁵ (for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?);

⁶ not a novice, lest being puffed up with pride he fall into the same condemnation as the devil.

⁷ Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Tit 1:

⁶ if a man is blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of dissipation or insubordination.

⁷ **For a bishop must be blameless, as a steward of God, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money,**

⁸ but hospitable, a lover of what is good, sober-minded, just, holy, self-controlled,

⁹ holding fast the faithful word as he has been taught, that he may be able, by sound doctrine, both to exhort and convict those who contradict.

A WOMAN MUST BE ABLE TO DETERMINE WHAT THE TRUE STATUS OF HER RELATIONSHIP WITH HER HUSBAND REALLY IS. IN OTHER WORDS IS SHE ENSLAVED OR FREE:

1 Pe 3:

¹Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the word, they, without a word, may be won by the conduct of their wives,

²when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by GODLY fear.

³Do not let your adornment be merely outward – arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel –

⁴rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God.

⁵For in this manner, in former times, the holy women **who trusted in God** also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands,

⁶as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, **whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror. [of your husbands]**

From Chapter Five

THE STORY OF SODOM AND GOMORRAH

Ge 18:

²⁰And the Lord said, “Because the outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grave,

²¹I will go down now and see whether they have done altogether according to the outcry against it that has come to Me; and if not, I will know.”

Ge 19:

¹Now the two angels came to Sodom in the evening, and Lot was sitting in the gate of Sodom. When Lot saw them, he rose to meet them, and he bowed himself with his face toward the ground.

²And he said, “Here now, my lords, please turn in to your servant’s house and spend the night, and wash your feet; then you may rise early and

go on your way." And they said, "No, but we will spend the night in the open square."

³ But he insisted strongly; so they turned in to him and entered his house. Then he made them a feast, and baked unleavened bread, and they ate.

⁴ Now before they lay down, the men of the city, the men of Sodom, both old and young, all the people from every quarter, surrounded the house.

⁵ And they called to Lot and said to him, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us that we may know them carnally."

⁶ So Lot went out to them through the doorway, shut the door behind him, ⁷ and said, "Please, my brethren, do not do so wickedly!

⁸ See now, I have two daughters who have not known a man; please, let me bring them out to you, and you may do to them as you wish; only do nothing to these men, since this is the reason they have come under the shadow of my roof."

⁹ And they said, "Stand back!" Then they said, "This one came in to stay here, and he keeps acting as a judge; now we will deal worse with you than with them." So they pressed hard against the man Lot, and came near to break down the door.

¹⁰ But the men reached out their hands and pulled Lot into the house with them, and shut the door.

¹¹ And they struck the men who were at the doorway of the house with blindness, both small and great, so that they became weary trying to find the door.

¹² Then the men said to Lot, "Have you anyone else here? Son-in-law, your sons, your daughters, and whomever you have in the city – take them out of this place!

¹³ For we will destroy this place, because the outcry against them has grown great before the face of the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it."

¹⁴ So Lot went out and spoke to his sons-in-law, who had married his daughters, and said, "Get up, get out of this place; for the Lord will destroy this city!" But to his sons-in-law he seemed to be joking.

¹⁵ When the morning dawned, the angels urged Lot to hurry, saying, "Arise, take your wife and your two daughters who are here, lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city."

¹⁶ And while he lingered, the men took hold of his hand, his wife's hand, and the hands of his two daughters, the Lord being merciful to him, and they brought him out and set him outside the city.

¹⁷ So it came to pass, when they had brought them outside, that he said, "Escape for your life! Do not look behind you nor stay anywhere in the plain. Escape to the mountains, lest you be destroyed."

¹⁸ Then Lot said to them, "Please, no, my lords!

¹⁹ Indeed now, your servant has found favor in your sight, and you have increased your mercy which you have shown me by saving my life; but I cannot escape to the mountains, lest some evil overtake me and I die.

²⁰ See now, this city is near enough to flee to, and it is a little one; please let me escape there (is it not a little one?) and my soul shall live."

²¹ And he said to him, "See, I have favored you concerning this thing also, in that I will not overthrow this city for which you have spoken.

²² Hurry, escape there. For I cannot do anything until you arrive there." Therefore the name of the city was called Zoar.

²³ The sun had risen upon the earth when Lot entered Zoar.

²⁴ Then the Lord rained brimstone and fire on Sodom and Gomorrah, from the Lord out of the heavens.

²⁵ So He overthrew those cities, all the plain, all the inhabitants of the cities, and what grew on the ground.

²⁶ But his wife looked back behind him, and she became a pillar of salt.

²⁷ And Abraham went early in the morning to the place where he had stood before the Lord.

²⁸ Then he looked toward Sodom and Gomorrah, and toward all the land of the plain; and he saw, and behold, the smoke of the land which went up like the smoke of a furnace.

²⁹ And it came to pass, when God destroyed the cities of the plain, that God remembered Abraham, and sent Lot out of the midst of the overthrow, when He overthrew the cities in which Lot had dwelt.

Eze 16:49

Look, this was the iniquity of your sister **Sodom**: She and her daughter had pride, fullness of food, and abundance of idleness; neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy.

Jude

⁷ as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities around them in a similar manner to these, **having given themselves over to sexual immorality** and gone after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

⁸ Likewise also these dreamers defile the flesh, reject authority, and speak evil of dignitaries.

SODOM AND GOMORRAH HAD COMPLETELY LOST THE PLOT ON EVERYTHING. THEY WERE TOTALLY OUT OF CONTROL. WHEN WE MAKE A JUDGEMENT ON ANY SOCIETY WE WEIGH DEEDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS AGAINST IMMORALITY. THIS CAN ONLY BE DONE WITH THE BIBLE. WE CANNOT DO IT OURSELVES BECAUSE IT'S AMAZING WHAT WE CAN BECOME USED TO. THAT'S WHY LOT'S SON-IN-LAWS DID NOT BELIEVE THEY WERE ABOUT TO BE DESTROYED BECAUSE THEY HAD BECOME SO USED TO THE DEPRAVITY AROUND THEM AND IT HAD ALL BEEN EXPLAINED AWAY AS BEING PERFECTLY NORMAL.

Eze 18:4

“Behold, all **souls** are Mine; The **soul** of the father As well as the **soul** of the son is Mine; The **soul** who sins shall **die**.

YES, BUT WE ALL DIE DON'T WE. THIS ALWAYS REFERS TO THE STATE OF MIND OF SOMEONE WHO KEEPS GOING FROM BAD TO WORSE. HE LIVES IN A STATE OF DEATH AND BECOMES EVER MORE DEPRAVED IN HIS WAY OF THINKING.

OUR PRESENT GENERATION IS IN SERIOUS TROUBLE:

Prov 30

¹¹ There is a generation that curses its father, And does not bless its mother.

¹² There is a generation that is pure in its own eyes, Yet is not washed from its filthiness.

¹³ There is a generation – oh, how lofty are their eyes! And their eyelids are lifted up.

¹⁴ There is a generation whose teeth are like swords, And whose fangs are like knives, To devour the poor from off the earth, And the needy from among men.

Joel 1

¹⁵ Alas for the day! For the day of the Lord is at hand; It shall come as destruction from the Almighty.

¹⁶ Is not the food cut off before our eyes, Joy and gladness from the house of our God?

¹⁷The seed shrivels under the clods, Storehouses are in shambles; Barns are broken down, For the grain has withered.

¹⁸How the animals groan! The herds of cattle are restless, Because they have no pasture; Even the flocks of sheep suffer punishment.

¹⁹O Lord, to You I cry out; For fire has devoured the open pastures, And a flame has burned all the trees of the field.

²⁰The beasts of the field also cry out to You, For the water brooks are dried up, And fire has devoured the open pastures. DROUGHTS ARE ON THE INCREASE

Eze 23:35

“Therefore thus says the Lord God: ‘Because you have forgotten Me and cast Me behind your back, Therefore you shall bear the **penalty** Of your lewdness and your harlotry.’ ”

Romans 1:

¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness,

¹⁹because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has shown it to them.

²⁰For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse,

²¹because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened.

²²Professing to be wise, they became fools,

²³and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man – and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things.

²⁴Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves,

²⁵who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

²⁶For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature.

²⁷Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due.

²⁸ And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting;

²⁹ being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers,

³⁰ backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

³¹ undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful;

³² who, knowing the righteous judgement of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.

THE CHURCH MUST PRESENT THE GOSPEL IN ALL ITS FULNESS AND NOT PICK AND CHOOSE BASED ON OFFENCE OR AVOID ISSUES THAT WILL CAUSE PROVOCATION.

Mr 8:38

For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful **generation**, of him the Son of Man also will be ashamed when He comes in the glory of His Father with the holy angels."

THE ZEITGEIST OF THIS PRESENT GENERATION IS TURNING THINGS UPSIDE DOWN AND BACK TO FRONT AND RUBBISHING ANYONE WHO POINTS OUT THE FOOLISHNESS OF WHAT'S BEING TAUGHT:

Isa 5:

²⁰ **Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness for light, and light for darkness; Who put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**

²¹ Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes, And prudent in their own sight!

²² Woe to men mighty at drinking wine, Woe to men valiant for mixing intoxicating drink,

²³ Who justify the wicked for a bribe, And take away justice from the righteous man!

THE CHURCH HAS GOT TO PLAY CATCH-UP AND GET BACK TO THE BASIC PRINCIPLES OF SOUND BIBLICAL DOCTRINE:

Mt 24:45

“Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household, to give them food **in due season**?”

2 Tim 4:

¹ I charge you therefore before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead at* His appearing and His kingdom:

² **Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching.**

³ For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers;

⁴ and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.

⁵ But you be watchful in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.

LET US NOT GET INVOLVED WITH SIN DISCRIMINATION:

1 Cor 6:

⁹ Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites,

¹⁰ **nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God.**

¹¹ And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.

Eze 22:

²³ And the word of the Lord came to me, saying,

²⁴ “Son of man, say to her: ‘You are a land that is not cleansed or rained on in the day of indignation.’”

²⁵ The conspiracy of her prophets in her midst is like a roaring lion tearing

the prey; they have devoured people; they have taken treasure and precious things; they have made many widows in her midst.

²⁶ Her priests have violated My law and profaned My holy things; they have not distinguished between the holy and unholy, nor have they made known the difference between the unclean and the clean; and they have hidden their eyes from My Sabbaths, so that I am profaned among them.

²⁷ Her princes in her midst are like wolves tearing the prey, to shed blood, to destroy people, and to get dishonest gain.

²⁸ Her prophets plastered them with untempered mortar, seeing false visions, and divining lies for them, saying, 'Thus says the Lord God,' when the Lord had not spoken.

²⁹ **The people of the land have used oppressions, committed robbery, and mistreated the poor and needy; and they wrongfully oppress the stranger.**

³⁰ So I sought for a man among them who would make a wall, and stand in the gap before Me on behalf of the land, that I should not destroy it; but I found no one.

³¹ Therefore I have poured out My indignation on them; I have consumed them with the fire of My wrath; and I have recompensed their deeds on their own heads," says the Lord God.

THERE IS A LOT OF TROUBLE IN THIS WORLD WHOSE CAUSES NEED TO BE EXPLAINED AND TAUGHT BY THE CHURCH, WE DE-VALUE OUR MESSAGE WHEN WE POINT OUT ONE SIN TO THE EXCLUSION OF MANY OTHERS:

Rom 3:

¹⁹ Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, **and all the world may become guilty before God.**

²⁰ Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

²¹ But now the righteousness of God apart from the law is revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets,

²² even the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus Christ, to all and on all who believe. For there is no difference;

²³ **for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,**

Jas 5

¹ Come now, you rich, weep and howl for your miseries that are coming upon you!

² Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

³ Your gold and silver are corroded, and their corrosion will be a witness against you and will eat your flesh like fire. You have heaped up treasure in the last days.

⁴ Indeed the wages of the laborers who mowed your fields, which you kept back by fraud, cry out; and the cries of the reapers have reached the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

⁵ You have lived on the earth in pleasure and luxury; you have fattened your hearts as in a day of slaughter.

⁶ You have condemned, you have murdered the just; he does not resist you.

¹⁹ Brethren, if anyone among you wanders from the truth, and someone turns him back,

²⁰ let him know that he who turns a sinner from the error of his way will save a soul from death and cover a multitude of sins.

THERE IS SEXUAL MADNESS IN THIS GENERATION AND THE CONSEQUENCES ARE MULTIPLYING:

Gal 5:

¹⁹ **Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness,**

²⁰ idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies,

²¹ envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like; of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God

Rom 1:

¹⁸ For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness,

¹⁹ because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has shown it to them.

²⁰ For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse,

²¹because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened.

²²Professing to be wise, they became fools,

²³and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man – and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things.

²⁴Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves,

²⁵who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

²⁶For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature.

²⁷Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due.

²⁸And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting;

²⁹being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers,

³⁰backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

³¹undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful;

³²who, knowing the righteous judgement of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.

DOING SOMETHING WRONG AND BEING ASHAMED OF IT AT LEAST CONVEYS A SENSE OF REGRET. BUT DOING SOMETHING WRONG AND PARADING IT IN FRONT OF OTHERS AND SEEKING OUT THEIR SYMPATHY IS AUDACIOUS AND SOCIOPATHIC.

Isa 3:9

The look on their countenance witnesses against them, And they declare their sin as **Sodom**; They do not hide it. Woe to their soul! For they have brought evil upon themselves

WE SHOULD NOT PROVIDE EXCUSES FOR THE SINS OF THIS GENERATION OR GIVE THEM ANY REASON TO TRY AND EXCUSE THEIR BAD BEHAVIOUR:

Ec 5:6

Do not let your mouth cause your flesh to sin, nor say before the messenger of God that it was an error. Why should God be angry at your **excuse** and destroy the work of your hands?

Joh 15:22

If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no **excuse** for their sin.

Rom 1:20

For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without **excuse**,

OUR LIVES MUST BE OUR WITNESS, OUR EXAMPLE MUST BE OUR SERMON. JUDGEMENT IS ON ALL MEN FROM THE LAW. MEN DO NOT ANSWER TO US, THEY ANSWER TO GOD:

Mt 5:16

Let your light so shine before men, that they may see **your** good works and glorify **your** Father in heaven.

1 Pet 3:

⁸ Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;

⁹ not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing.

¹⁰ For "He who would love life And see good days, Let him refrain his tongue from evil, And his lips from speaking deceit.

¹¹ Let him turn away from evil and do good; Let him seek peace and pursue it.

¹² For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, And His ears are open to their prayers; But the face of the Lord is against those who do evil."

¹³ And who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good?

¹⁴ But even if you should suffer for righteousness' sake, you are blessed. "And do not be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled."

¹⁵ But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defense to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear;

¹⁶ having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed.

¹⁷ For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

Mt 12:36

But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will **give account** of it in the day of judgement.

Rom 14:12

So then each of us shall **give account** of himself to God.

Heb 4:13

And there is no creature hidden from His sight, but all things are naked and open to the eyes of Him to whom we must **give account**.

1 Pe 4:5

They will **give an account** to Him who is ready to judge the living and the dead.

PEOPLE HATE HYPOCRISY AND THEY CANNOT STAND IT WHEN ONE THING IS TAUGHT AND REALITY PROVES THE OPPOSITE.

Job 8:13

So are the paths of all who forget God; And the hope of the **hypocrite** shall perish,

Job 17:8

Upright men are astonished at this, And the innocent stirs himself up against the **hypocrite**.

Job 20:5

That the triumphing of the wicked is short, And the joy of the **hypocrite** is but for a moment?

Job 27:8

For what is the hope of the **hypocrite**, Though he may gain much, If God takes away his life?

Job 34:30

That the **hypocrite** should not reign, Lest the people be ensnared.

Pr 11:9

The **hypocrite** with his mouth destroys his neighbor, But through knowledge the righteous will be delivered.

Isa 9:17

Therefore the Lord will have no joy in their young men, Nor have mercy on their fatherless and widows; For everyone is a **hypocrite** and an evildoer, And every mouth speaks folly. For all this His anger is not turned away, But His hand is stretched out still.

Lu 6:42

Or how can you say to your brother, 'Brother, let me remove the speck that is in your eye,' when you yourself do not see the plank that is in your own eye? **Hypocrite!** First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck that is in your brother's eye

Gal 2:

¹³ **And the rest of the Jews also played the hypocrite with him, so that even Barnabas was carried away with their hypocrisy.**

¹⁴ But when I saw that they were not straightforward about the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter before them all, "If you, being a Jew, live in the manner of Gentiles and not as the Jews, why do you compel Gentiles to live as Jews?"

Mt 22:18

But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, "Why do you test Me, you **hypocrites?**"

Mt 23:13

But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.

Mt 23:14

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore you will receive greater condemnation.

Mt 23:15

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves.

Mt 23:23

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, **hypocrites!** For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone.

Ro 12:9

Let love be without **hypocrisy**. Abhor what is evil. Cling to what is good.

1 Ti 4:2

speaking lies in **hypocrisy**, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,

Jas 3:17

But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, willing to yield, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality and without **hypocrisy**.

1 Pe 2:1

Therefore, laying aside all malice, all deceit, **hypocrisy**, envy, and all evil speaking,

THE CHURCH SHOULD NEVER BE FOUND WANTING IN PROVIDING GOOD GUIDANCE WHEN IT'S ASKED FOR. WITHOUT HYPOCRISY, WITHOUT DOGMA, WITHOUT DISCRIMINATION:

2 Sa 20:18

So she spoke, saying, "They used to talk in former times, saying, 'They shall surely seek **guidance** at Abel,' and so they would end disputes.

1 Ch 10:13

So Saul died for his unfaithfulness which he had committed against the Lord, because he did not keep the word of the Lord, and also because he consulted a medium for **guidance**.

Eph 4:15

but, speaking the **truth** in **love**, may grow up in all things into Him who is the head – Christ –

2 Tim 3:16

All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for **doctrine**, for reproof, for **correction**, for **instruction in righteousness**,

1 Joh 3:18

My little children, let us not **love** in word or in tongue, but in deed and in **truth**.

Ga 4:16

Have I therefore become your enemy because I **tell** you the **truth**?

THE CHURCH HAS TO DEMONSTRATE UNITY TO THE WORLD, OUR EXAMPLE HAS TO PRECEDE THE TEACHING OF THE GOSPEL. IF WE CAN'T DEMONSTRATE LOVE AND UNITY TOWARD ONE ANOTHER THEN WHY SHOULD THE WORLD TAKE US SERIOUSLY:

Amos 3:3

Can two walk together, unless they are agreed?

Mat 12:25

“Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and every city or house divided against itself will not stand.

Joh 13:

³⁴ A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.

³⁵ By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another.”

Joh 17:

²⁰ “I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word;

²¹ that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me.

²² And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one:

²³ I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me.

Gal 5:

¹³ For you, brethren, have been called to liberty; only do not use liberty as an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another.

¹⁴ For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.”

¹⁵ **But if you bite and devour one another, beware lest you be consumed by one another!**

Eph 4:

¹ I, therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you to walk worthy of the calling with which you were called,

² with all lowliness and gentleness, with longsuffering, bearing with one another in love,

³ endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

⁴ There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called in one hope of your calling;

⁵ one Lord, one faith, one baptism;

⁶one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

Php 2

³Let nothing be done through selfish ambition or conceit, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than himself.

⁴Let each of you look out not only for his own interests, but also for the interests of others

1 Joh 1:

⁵This is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all.

⁶If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth.

⁷But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.

WE ARE ALL TRINITY BEINGS, HAVING BODY, SOUL AND SPIRIT, BUT IN THIS WORLD WE HAVE A SERIOUS AND POWERFUL ENEMY:

Job 1:7

And the Lord said to **Satan**, "From where do you come?" So **Satan** answered the Lord and said, "From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it."

Zec 3:

¹Then he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the Angel of the Lord, and **Satan** standing at his right hand to oppose him.

²And the Lord said to **Satan**, "The Lord rebuke you, **Satan!** The Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?"

Joh 14:30

I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming, and he has **nothing in Me**.

Eph 2:2

in which you once walked according to **the course of** this world,

according to **the prince of the power of the air**, the spirit who now works in **the sons of disobedience**,

1 Jo 5:19

We know that we are of God, and the whole world **lies** under the sway of the wicked one.

HE CANNOT HARM DIRECTLY, BUT HE TEMPTS MAN TO HIS ULTIMATE DESTRUCTION:

Joh 8:44

You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a **liar** and the father of it.

1 Joh 2:16

For all that is in **the world** – **the lust of the flesh**, **the lust of the eyes**, and **the pride of life** – is not **of the Father** but is **of the world**.

Jas 1:

¹³ Let no one say when he is **tempted**, “I am **tempted** by God”; for God cannot be **tempted** by evil, nor does He Himself tempt anyone.

¹⁴ But each one is **tempted** when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed

BLAME IT ON THE DEVIL. THAT’S WHAT WE ALL SAY BUT THE FACT IS OUR CONSCIENCE TELLS US WHAT IS RIGHT AND WRONG, IT’S JUST EASIER TO GIVE IN TO TEMPTATION. WE ALL HAVE A CHOICE ABOUT THE DECISIONS WE MAKE AND WE ARE ACCOUNTABLE FOR WHAT WE DO:

Ga 5:17

For the flesh **lusts** against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary to one another, so that you do not do the things that you wish.

Eph 2:3

among whom also we all once conducted ourselves in the **lusts** of our

flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, just as the others.

Eph 4:22

that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful **lusts**,

1 Tim 6:9

But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful **lusts** which drown men in destruction and perdition.

2 Tim 3:

¹ But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come:

² For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

³ unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good,

⁴ traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,

⁵ having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!

⁶ For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts,

⁷ always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

Tit 3:3

For we ourselves were also once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various **lusts** and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful and hating one another.

1 Pe 4:

² that he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh for the **lusts** of men, but for the will of God.

³ For we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles; when we walked in lewdness, **lusts**, drunkenness, revelries, drinking parties, and abominable idolatries.

2 Pe 3:3

knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own **lusts**,

Jude 1:16

These are grumblers, complainers, walking according to their own **lusts**; and they mouth great swelling words, flattering people to gain advantage.

Jude 1:18

how they told you that there would be mockers in the last time who would walk according to their own ungodly **lusts**.

IF WE CONTINUE ON OUR DESTRUCTIVE PATH, WE WILL END UP DOING UNTHINKABLE THINGS:

Pr 29:18

Where there is no revelation, the people cast off **restraint**; But happy is he who keeps the law.

Ho 4:2

By swearing and lying, Killing and stealing and committing adultery, They break all **restraint**, With bloodshed upon bloodshed.

WE SHOULD BE WARY OF THE STATE OF OUR HEART (SPIRIT) AND HAVE A CHECK-UP FROM TIME TO TIME:

Jer 17:9

“The heart is **deceitful** above all things, And desperately wicked; Who can know it?

Ps 139:23

Search me, O God, and know my heart; Try **me**, and know my anxieties;

Heb 4:12

For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and **marrow**, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

MALE AND FEMALE. BIOLOGICALLY DIFFERENT BUT DOES THE BIBLE SHOW DISTINCTIONS AT A DEEPER LEVEL?

Job 2

⁹Then his wife said to him, "Do you still hold fast to your integrity? Curse God and die!"

¹⁰But he said to her, "You speak as one of the foolish women speaks. Shall we indeed accept good from God, and shall we not accept adversity?" In all this Job did not sin with his lips.

WOMEN TEND TOWARD EXTREMES OF HIGHS AND LOWS IN THEIR EMOTIONAL RESPONSE.

Pr 31:3

Do not give your strength to **women**, Nor your ways to that which destroys kings.

WOMEN TEND TO SUPPLICATE THEMSELVES TO THE MAN'S SOFTER SIDE, LIKE A PLANT TAKING ROOT IN FERTILE SOIL. THIS RENDERS THE MAN HIGHLY SUSCEPTIBLE TO SUGGESTION.

Isa 19:16

In that day Egypt will be like **women**, and will be afraid and fear because of the waving of the hand of the Lord of hosts, which He waves over it.

WOMEN HAVE A TENDENCY TO BE FEARFUL AND ANXIOUS ABOUT MANY THINGS AND ARE IN CONSTANT NEED OF REASSURANCE.

Jer 2:33

"Why do you beautify your way to seek love? Therefore you have also taught The wicked **women** your ways.

WOMEN TEND TO DECORATE THEIR FACES AND BODIES WITH MAKEUP AND JEWELLERY TO ADD VALUE TO THEIR ESTEEM THROUGH THEIR PHYSICAL APPEARANCE.

Jer 44:19

The **women** also said, "And when we burned incense to the queen of

heaven and poured out drink offerings to her, did we make cakes for her, to worship her, and pour out drink offerings to her without our husbands' permission?"

WOMEN ARE AGGRIEVED WHEN THEY FIND THEMSELVES SUFFERING FOR THE ERROR OF THEIR HUSBANDS. BUT THAT IS THE CURSE THAT ALL WOMEN LIVE UNDER.

Eze 13:18

and say, 'Thus says the Lord God: "Woe to the **women** who sew magic charms on their sleeves and make veils for the heads of people of every height to hunt souls! Will you hunt the souls of My people, and keep yourselves alive?"

WOMEN TEND TO BE MORE SUPERSTITIOUS THAN MEN BECAUSE THEY ARE MORE HIGHLY ATTUNED TO THE SOUL AND SPIRIT THAN THEY ARE TO THE FLESH.

Eze 23:48

Thus I will cause lewdness to cease from the land, that all **women** may be taught not to practice your lewdness.

WOMEN TEND TO FOLLOW THE MAN INTO THE GUTTER OR INTO NOBILITY. SHE WILL SUBORDINATE HER OWN DESIRES, EVEN HER OWN CONSCIENCE TO HIS LEAD.

I HAVE NOT QUOTED ANY SCRIPTURES FROM THE NEW TESTAMENT ON THIS SUBJECT BECAUSE WE BEGIN TO SEE THE ATTITUDE AND Demeanour OF WOMEN CHANGING TO REFLECT THEIR DELIVERANCE FROM THE CURSE ALL OTHER WOMEN LIVE UNDER. SUFFICE IT TO SAY, WOMEN ARE VERY DIFFERENT FROM MEN AND ANY ATTEMPT AT SO-CALLED GENDER NORMALISATION IN SOCIETY OR UNDER MAN'S LAW IS A CORRUPTION OF TRUTH AND REALITY.

UNDER THE OLD COVENANT, DISABLEMENT OR ANY PHYSICAL ODDITY WAS SEEN AS A DEFECT THAT WOULD NOT PERMIT INCLUSION IN THE WORSHIP RITUALS:

Lev 21:

¹⁶ And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying,

¹⁷ "Speak to Aaron, saying: 'No man of your descendants in succeeding generations, who has any defect, may approach to offer the bread of his God.

¹⁸ For any man who has a defect shall not approach: a man blind or lame, who has a marred face or any limb too long,

¹⁹ a man who has a broken foot or broken hand,

²⁰ **or is a hunchback or a dwarf, or a man who has a defect in his eye, or eczema or scab, or is a eunuch.**

²¹ No man of the descendants of Aaron the priest, who has a defect, shall come near to offer the offerings made by fire to the Lord. He has a defect; he shall not come near to offer the bread of his God.

²² He may eat the bread of his God, both the most holy and the holy;

²³ only he shall not go near the veil or approach the altar, because he has a defect, lest he profane My sanctuaries; for I the Lord sanctify them.'

PHYSICAL PURITY UNDER THE OLD COVENANT WAS A GOD-ORDAINED REQUIREMENT. THAT CHANGED UNDER THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE NEW COVENANT THAT GAVE EUNUCHS, AMONG OTHERS, ACCESS TO SPIRITUAL BLESSINGS THAT HAD PREVIOUSLY BEEN WITHHELD:

Isa 56:

³ Do not let the son of the foreigner Who has joined himself to the Lord Speak, saying, "The Lord has utterly separated me from His people"; Nor let the eunuch say, "Here I am, a dry tree."

⁴ For thus says the Lord: "To the eunuchs who keep My Sabbaths, And choose what pleases Me, And hold fast My covenant,

⁵ Even to them I will give in My house And within My walls a place and a name Better than that of sons and daughters; I will give them an everlasting name That shall not be cut off.

Ac 8:

²⁶ Now an angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying, "Arise and go toward the south along the road which goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." This is desert.

²⁷ So he arose and went. And behold, a man of Ethiopia, **a eunuch of great**

authority under Candace the queen of the Ethiopians, who had charge of all her treasury, and had come to Jerusalem to worship,
²⁸ was returning. And sitting in his chariot, he was reading Isaiah the prophet.

²⁹ Then the Spirit said to Philip, "Go near and overtake this chariot."

³⁰ So Philip ran to him, and heard him reading the prophet Isaiah, and said, "Do you understand what you are reading?"

³¹ And he said, "How can I, unless someone guides me?" And he asked Philip to come up and sit with him.

³² The place in the Scripture which he read was this: "He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; And as a lamb before its shearer is silent, So He opened not His mouth.

³³ In His humiliation His justice was taken away, And who will declare His generation? For His life is taken from the earth."

³⁴ So the eunuch answered Philip and said, "I ask you, of whom does the prophet say this, of himself or of some other man?"

³⁵ Then Philip opened his mouth, and beginning at this Scripture, preached Jesus to him.

³⁶ Now as they went down the road, they came to some water. And the eunuch said, "See, here is water. What hinders me from being baptized?"

³⁷ Then Philip said, "If you believe with all your heart, you may." And he answered and said, "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God."

³⁸ So he commanded the chariot to stand still. And both Philip and the eunuch went down into the water, and he baptized him.

³⁹ Now when they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, so that the eunuch saw him no more; and he went on his way rejoicing.

Mat 19:

¹⁰ His disciples said to Him, "If such is the case of the man with his wife, it is better not to marry."

¹¹ But He said to them, "All cannot accept this saying, but only those to whom it has been given:

¹² **For there are eunuchs who were born thus from their mother's womb, and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men, and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He who is able to accept it, let him accept it."**

IN THIS LAST SCRIPTURE JESUS MADE THE ASSOCIATION OF MEN, FREELY CHOOSING TO FOREGO SEX AND MARRIAGE, WITH MEN WHO HAD NO CHOICE.

Ac 5:

¹³ Yet none of the rest dared join them, but the people esteemed them highly.

¹⁴ And believers were increasingly added to the Lord, multitudes of both men and women,

¹⁵ so that they brought the sick out into the streets and laid them on beds and couches, that at least the shadow of Peter passing by might fall on some of them.

¹⁶ Also a multitude gathered from the surrounding cities to Jerusalem, bringing sick people and those who were tormented by unclean spirits, and they were all healed.

THIS IS THE ACID TEST OF THE CHURCH TODAY WITH ITS CURRENT ROLE IN SOCIETY: 1) AN UNCOMPROMISING MESSAGE OF TRUTH AND DELIVERANCE 2) MIRACULOUS HEALING AS A SUPERNATURAL CONSEQUENCE OF GENUINE REPENTANCE 3) THE CHURCH HELD IN A STATE OF HIGH ESTEEM FROM PEOPLE AT ALL LEVELS OF SOCIETY.

THE FOLLOWING SCRIPTURES WERE ALLUDED TO IN THE QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS AT THE END OF THIS CHAPTER:

1 Corinthians 5:

⁹ **I wrote to you in my epistle not to keep company with sexually immoral people.**

¹⁰ Yet I certainly did not mean with the sexually immoral people of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world.

¹¹ But now I have written to you **not to keep company with anyone named a brother, who is sexually immoral**, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner – not even to eat with such a person.

Luke 15: 11–32

The story of the Prodigal Son

1 Cor 5:

¹ It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality among you, and such sexual immorality as is not even named* among the Gentiles – that a man has his father's wife!

² And you are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he who has done this deed might be taken away from among you.

³ For I indeed, as absent in body but present in spirit, have already judged (as though I were present) him who has so done this deed.

⁴ In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, along with my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

⁵ deliver such a one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

Mat 18:

¹⁵ "Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother.

¹⁶ But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.'

¹⁷ **And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector.**

¹⁸ Assuredly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.

¹⁹ Again I say to you that if two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in heaven.

²⁰ For where two or three are gathered together in My name, I am there in the midst of them."

IN ALL THE MATTERS DISCUSSED IN THIS CHAPTER, WE SEE THE WISDOM OF A HIGHER LAW THAT TRANSCENDS THE WISDOM OF THIS WORLD. THE BIBLE IS THE HIGHEST AUTHORITY THAT THE CHURCH CAN TURN TO FOR WISDOM AND GUIDANCE ABOUT ALL MATTERS THAT RELATE TO THE HUMAN CONDITION. WE SHOULD NEVER SEEK TO UNDERMINE IT THROUGH TRADITION, DOGMA AND PRIVATE INTERPRETATION:

Isa 55:9

“For as the heavens **are higher** than the earth, So **are My ways higher** than your **ways**, And **My** thoughts than your thoughts.

Pr 3:5

Trust in the Lord with all your heart, And lean not on your **own understanding**;

From Chapter Six

THE WILL OF GOD IS THAT PEOPLE OF THE EARTH REPENT LONG BEFORE WE GET TO THE STAGE WHERE WE BEGIN TO CONTEMPLATE TAKING OUR OWN LIVES:

Amos 5:

¹⁰ They hate the one who rebukes in the gate, And they abhor the one who speaks uprightly.

¹¹ Therefore, because you tread down the poor And take grain taxes from him, Though you have built houses of hewn stone, Yet you shall not dwell in them; You have planted pleasant vineyards, But you shall not drink wine from them.

¹² For I know your manifold transgressions And your mighty sins: Afflicting the just and taking bribes; Diverting the poor from justice at the gate.

¹³ Therefore the prudent keep silent at that time, For it is an evil time.

¹⁴ Seek good and not evil, That you may live; So the Lord God of hosts will be with you, As you have spoken

De 28:15

“But it shall come to pass, if **you** do not obey the voice of the Lord **your** God, to observe carefully all His commandments and His statutes which I command **you** today, that all these curses will come upon **you** and **overtake you**:

Jer 42:16

then it shall be that the sword which **you** feared shall **overtake you** there in the land of Egypt; the famine of which **you** were afraid shall follow close after **you** there in Egypt; and there **you** shall die.

Joh 12:35

Then Jesus said to them, "A little while longer the light is with **you**. Walk while **you** have the light, lest darkness **overtake you**; he who walks in darkness does not know where he is going.

IT'S NEVER TOO LATE, THAT'S WHAT THEY SAY. BUT THAT ISN'T WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES. PLAGUES, DROUGHTS, WAR, VIOLENCE, DEPRESSION, THESE CAN COME ALONG IN AN INSTANT; BUT THEY'RE YEARS IN THE MAKING AND IGNORING GOD AND HIS WAYS BRINGS THEM TO FRUITION:

1 Th 5:3

For when they say, "Peace and safety!" then **sudden destruction** comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape.

2 Ch 36:16

But they **mocked** the messengers of God, despised His words, and scoffed at His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy.

Job 4:8

Even as I have seen, Those who plow iniquity And **sow** trouble **reap** the same.

Ho 10:12

Sow **for** yourselves righteousness; Reap in **mercy**; Break up your fallow ground, **For** it is time to **seek** the Lord, Till He comes and rains righteousness on you.

Ga 6:7

Do **not** be deceived, **God is not mocked**; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.

WHAT ABOUT MERCY? ISN'T GOD A GOD OF MERCY? YES HE IS BUT HE IS ALSO THE GOD OF JUSTICE AND HE ABSOLUTELY STANDS BY HIS WORD.

2 Sa 22:26

“With the **merciful** You will show Yourself **merciful**; With a blameless man You will show Yourself blameless;

Ps 59:5

You therefore, O Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel, Awake to punish all the nations; Do not be **merciful** to any wicked transgressors. Selah

Ps 116:5

Gracious is the Lord, and righteous; Yes, our God is **merciful**.

Pr 11:17

The **merciful** man does good for his own soul, But he who is cruel troubles his own flesh.

Mt 5:7

Blessed are the **merciful**, For they shall obtain mercy.

Isa 55:6

Seek the Lord **while He may be found**, Call upon Him **while He is near**.

Joel 2:13

So rend your heart, and not your garments; Return to the Lord your God, For He is gracious and **merciful**, Slow to anger, and of great kindness; And He relents from doing harm.

THE CONSEQUENCES OF OUR ACTIONS WILL CATCH UP TO US AND OVERTAKE US. BLESSINGS WILL OVERTAKE THE GOOD, EVIL WILL OVERTAKE THE BAD. WHAT GOES AROUND, COMES AROUND. WE NEED TO BE SURE WE KNOW THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN GOOD AND EVIL AND LIVE OUR LIVES ACCORDINGLY.

THE CHURCH HAS TO COME TO TERMS WITH LEARNING THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN ACTION (SIN) AND CONSEQUENCE (IN THIS CASE, SUICIDE).

THE CHURCH IS HUNG UP ON THE DOCTRINE OF ETERNAL PUNISHMENT FOR UNBELIEVERS. THE BIBLE DOES NOT TEACH IT. THIS SUBJECT WILL BE DEALT WITH IN MUCH GREATER DETAIL IN A FUTURE BOOK.

FOR NOW, CHRISTIANS SHOULD NOTE THAT THE ONLY ONES FOR WHOM ETERNAL DEATH IS A POSSIBILITY ARE FAITHLESS CHRISTIANS. THE CHURCH IS PRESENTLY UNDER JUDGEMENT, THE WORLD ISN'T. THE WORLD IS UNDER THE LAW AND IS JUDGED BY THE LAW IN THIS LIFE; NOT IN THE FUTURE.

1 Pet 4

¹⁵ But let none of you suffer as a murderer, a thief, an evildoer, or as a busybody in other people's matters.

¹⁶ Yet if anyone suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter.

¹⁷ **For the time has come for judgement to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God?**

PETER ISN'T TALKING ABOUT UNBELIEVERS, HE'S TALKING ABOUT CHRISTIANS. EXACTLY WHAT PART OF THE GOSPEL OF GOD ARE WE SUPPOSED TO BE OBEYING?

THE ANSWER IS: ALL THE ORDINANCES OF THE NEW COVENANT. THE NEW COVENANT IS THE AGREEMENT THAT STANDS BETWEEN GOD AND BORN AGAIN BELIEVERS. GOD COMMITS HIMSELF TO DO MUCH FOR US AND WE, IN TURN, AGREE TO OBEY ALL THE TEACHINGS AND COMMANDMENTS OF JESUS CHRIST AND THE APOSTLES.

IF WE DO NOT LIVE AS WE ARE INSTRUCTED TO LIVE, WE BRING OURSELVES BACK UNDER CONDEMNATION. IF CHRISTIANS DO NOT REPENT . . .

Heb 10:

²⁶ For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins,

²⁷ but a certain fearful expectation of judgement, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries.

²⁸ Anyone who has rejected Moses' law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses.

²⁹ **Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?**

³⁰For we know Him who said, "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay," says the Lord. And again, "The Lord will judge His people."

³¹It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

Jude

⁴For certain men have crept in unnoticed, who long ago were marked out for this condemnation, ungodly men, who turn the grace of our God into lewdness and deny the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ

⁸Likewise also these dreamers defile the flesh, reject authority, and speak evil of dignitaries.

⁹Yet Michael the archangel, in contending with the devil, when he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a reviling accusation, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"

¹⁰But these speak evil of whatever they do not know; and whatever they know naturally, like brute beasts, in these things they corrupt themselves.

¹¹Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, have run greedily in the error of Balaam for profit, and perished in the rebellion of Korah.

¹²These are spots in your love feasts, while they feast with you without fear, serving only themselves. They are clouds without water, carried about by the winds; late autumn trees without fruit, **twice dead**, pulled up by the roots;

SO WHAT DOES GOD MEAN WHEN HE SPEAKS OF THE DAY OF JUDGEMENT? DEPENDING ON THE CONTEXT, IT WILL MEAN ONE OF TWO THINGS:

THE DAY OF JUDGEMENT IN TERMS OF THE DAY OF RECKONING AND PUNISHMENT: IE: I WARNED YOU, YOU DID NOT LISTEN, NOW HERE IS YOUR PUNISHMENT. OR THE DAY OF JUDGEMENT IN TERMS OF A PERIOD OF TESTING.

THE WORDS ARE THE SAME BUT MEAN VERY DIFFERENT THINGS.

FROM THE POINT OF VIEW OF GOD, SOMEONE WHO COMMITS SUICIDE IS NO MORE CONDEMNED THAN SOMEONE WHO DOESN'T. HE OR SHE MAY BE CONDEMNED BY PEOPLE BUT NOT BY GOD.

THERE IS ALSO NO DIRECT CONDEMNATION FROM GOD CONCERNING CHRISTIANS WHO TAKE THEIR OWN LIVES. IN FACT, JESUS WAS MORE CRITICAL OF THOSE WHO LOVE THIS LIFE TOO MUCH.

HOWEVER, THERE IS CONDEMNATION ON THOSE WHO WASTE THEIR TIME AND SUBSTANCE CHASING WRONG PRIORITIES. THIS MAY RESULT FROM POOR TEACHING WHICH CAN LEAD THEM DOWN THE WRONG PATH AND TOWARD THE CONSEQUENCE OF ILL HEALTH, DEPRESSION AND SUICIDE, BUT THEY DO NOT NECESSARILY LOSE OUT ON ETERNAL LIFE, FOR WHAT THEY DID, THEY DID IN IGNORANCE AND GOD JUDGES THE HEART:

2 Tim 2:

²² Flee also youthful lusts; but pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

²³ But avoid foolish and ignorant disputes, knowing that they generate strife.

²⁴ And a servant of the Lord must not quarrel but be gentle to all, able to teach, patient,

²⁵ in humility correcting those who are in opposition, if God perhaps will grant them repentance, so that they may know the truth,

²⁶ **and that they may come to their senses and escape the snare of the devil, having been taken captive by him to do his will.**

From Chapter Seven

THIS WOMAN HAD LIVED A LIFE OF COMPASSION, MERCY AND GENEROSITY. SHE WAS MUCH LOVED IN HER COMMUNITY AND HER DEEDS WERE KNOWN BY GOD AND SO HE USED PETER TO INTERCEDE FOR HER.

SHE WAS RAISED FROM THE DEAD, COMPLETELY HEALED AND THIS UNDENIABLE MIRACLE CONVICTED MANY OF THE TRUTH OF THE GOSPEL.

HOW SHE LIVED HER LIFE MADE ALL THE DIFFERENCE TO HER FUTURE. WHEN SHE NEEDED DIVINE MERCY AND HELP IT WAS GRANTED TO HER BECAUSE OF HER FAITHFULNESS IN THE PAST.

Acts 9:

³⁶ At Joppa there was a certain disciple named Tabitha, which is translated Dorcas. This woman was full of good works and charitable deeds which she did.

³⁷ But it happened in those days that she became sick and died. When they had washed her, they laid her in an upper room.

³⁸ And since Lydda was near Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent two men to him, imploring him not to delay in coming to them.

³⁹ Then Peter arose and went with them. When he had come, they brought him to the upper room. And all the widows stood by him weeping, showing the tunics and garments which Dorcas had made while she was with them.

⁴⁰ But Peter put them all out, and knelt down and prayed. And turning to the body he said, "Tabitha, arise." And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter she sat up.

⁴¹ Then he gave her his hand and lifted her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, he presented her alive.

⁴² And it became known throughout all Joppa, and many believed on the Lord.

JESUS CLEARLY IDENTIFIES THE DEFINITION OF MURDER, THAT IT IS BORN OF HATRED AND UNRESOLVED DISPUTE OR THE HARBOURING OF A GRUDGE.

IF SOMEONE ASSISTS SOMEONE TO DIE THERE IS NO WAY THAT THEY CAN POSSIBLY FALL INTO THIS CATEGORY.

EUTHANASIA IS NOT MURDER!

Mat 5:

²¹ **"You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgement.'**

²² But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgement. And whoever says to his brother, 'Raca!' shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, 'You fool!' shall be in danger of hell fire.

²³ Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you,

²⁴ leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

²⁵ Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are on the way with him,

lest your adversary deliver you to the judge, the judge hand you over to the officer, and you be thrown into prison.

²⁶ Assuredly, I say to you, you will by no means get out of there till you have paid the last penny.

OUR FEAR OF DEATH, SATAN KNOWS IT BETTER THAN ANYONE AND HE USES IT AGAINST US:

Job 2:4

So **Satan** answered the Lord and said, "Skin for skin! Yes, all that a man has he will give for his life.

DEATH IS A FACT OF LIFE FOR ALL OF US, WHETHER WE LIVE 20 YEARS OR 100. IN TERMS OF ETERNITY WE ARE ON EARTH FOR LESS THAN A MINUTE!

Ps 39:5

Indeed, You have made my days as handbreadths, And my age is as nothing before You; Certainly every man at his best state is but **vapor**.
Selah

Jas 4:14

whereas you do not know what will happen tomorrow. For what is your life? It is even a **vapor** that appears for a little time and then vanishes away.

THE FOLLOWING VERSE SAYS CHOOSE LIFE. WHY? BECAUSE WE'RE ALL ABOUT TO KILL OURSELVES? OF COURSE NOT. WE LIKE LIFE AND WANT IT TO CONTINUE AND GET BETTER.

GOD IS TALKING ABOUT THE WAY WE LIVE. IF WE FOLLOW HIS INSTRUCTIONS WE WILL HAVE AN ABUNDANT AND ENJOYABLE LIFE.

IF WE IGNORE HIM AND DO WHATEVER WE WANT, THERE WILL BE CONSEQUENCES AND FEAR, WHICH IS LIVING DEATH, AND GOD DOES NOT WANT US TO CHOOSE THAT. HE IS *NOT* TALKING ABOUT EXISTENCE.

De 30:19

I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, that I have set

before you **life** and death, blessing and cursing; therefore **choose life**, that both you and your descendants may live;

WE ARE ALL INDIVIDUAL CREATIONS. WE MUST RESPECT EVERY MAN AND WOMAN'S RIGHT TO MAKE THEIR OWN CHOICES EVEN IF WE DON'T AGREE WITH THEM AND NOT PUT OBSTACLES IN THEIR WAY TO JUSTIFY OUR FEARS

Ge 1:

²⁶Then **God** said, "Let Us make man in Our **image**, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish **of** the sea, over the birds **of** the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

²⁷So **God** created man in His own **image**; in the **image of God** He created him; male and female He created them.

1 Tim 4:

¹Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons,

²speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,

³**forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.**

⁴For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received with thanksgiving;

⁵for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

THE CHRISTIAN MESSAGE IS CORRECTIVE, REDEMPTIVE, INSTRUCTIVE AND, WHEN BELIEVED AND FOLLOWED, LEADS TO MIRACULOUS EVENTS LIKE THE ONE DESCRIBED BELOW:

Mr 1:15 – Show Context

and saying, "The time is fulfilled, **and** the kingdom of God is at **hand**. **Repent, and believe** in the gospel."

Mat 11:

⁵The blind see and the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear; the dead are raised up and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

²⁸ Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

²⁹ Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.

³⁰ For My yoke is easy and My burden is light."

Mar 5:

³⁵ While He was still speaking, some came from the ruler of the synagogue's house who said, "Your daughter is dead. Why trouble the Teacher any further?"

³⁶ As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, He said to the ruler of the synagogue, "Do not be afraid; only believe."

³⁷ And He permitted no one to follow Him except Peter, James, and John the brother of James.

³⁸ Then He came to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and saw a tumult and those who wept and wailed loudly.

³⁹ When He came in, He said to them, "Why make this commotion and weep? The child is not dead, but sleeping."

⁴⁰ And they ridiculed Him. But when He had put them all outside, He took the father and the mother of the child, and those who were with Him, and entered where the child was lying.

⁴¹ Then He took the child by the hand, and said to her, "Talitha, cumi," which is translated, "Little girl, I say to you, arise."

⁴² Immediately the girl arose and walked, for she was twelve years of age. And they were overcome with great amazement

WE CANNOT AND SHOULD NOT TRY TO JUDGE ANOTHER PERSON'S LIFE OR WHAT THEY'RE FEELING. ONLY GOD CAN DO THAT, HE/SHE MUST BE ALLOWED TO EXERCISE HIS/HER OWN CHOICE:

Joh 12:47

And if anyone hears My words and does **not** believe, I do **not judge** him; for I did **not** come to **judge** the world but to save the world.

Rom 14:3

Let **not** him who eats despise him who does **not** eat, and let **not** him who does **not** eat **judge** him who eats; for God has received him.

Rom 14:13

Therefore let us **not judge** one **another** anymore, but rather resolve this, **not** to put a stumbling block or a cause to fall in our brother's way.

Isa 66:18

"For I know **their** works and **their thoughts**. It shall be that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come and see My glory.

Rom 2:15

who show the work of the law written in **their** hearts, **their** conscience also bearing witness, and between themselves **their thoughts** accusing or else excusing them)

From Chapter Eight

THE STATE HAS THE RIGHT TO GOVERN AND TO EXECUTE THE LAW AS THEY SEE FIT. THEY ARE NOT REQUIRED TO COMPLY TO THE WISHES OF THE CHURCH. IF THEY CHOOSE, THEY MAY WISH TO SEEK COUNSEL FROM US AND WE CAN OFFER GUIDANCE TO THEM BUT THEY ARE UNDER NO OBLIGATION TO ACCEPT IT. RATHER WE MUST BE CAREFUL TO OBEY THEM AND NOT PUT STUMBLING BLOCKS IN THEIR WAY.

Rom 13:

¹ Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God.

² Therefore whoever resists the authority resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgement on themselves.

³ For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Do you want to be unafraid of the authority? Do what is good, and you will have praise from the same.

⁴ **For he is God's minister to you for good. But if you do evil, be afraid; for he does not bear the sword in vain; for he is God's minister, an avenger to execute wrath on him who practices evil.**

Rom 13:7

Render therefore **to** all their due: taxes **to whom** taxes are due, customs **to whom** customs, fear **to whom** fear, **honor to whom** honor.

Col 1:16

For by Him all things were **created** that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were **created** through Him and for Him.

A RAPE VICTIM IS RELEASED FROM THE LAW WHEN HER ATTACKER IS EXECUTED:

Deu 22:

²⁵ "But if a man finds a betrothed young woman in the countryside, and the man forces her and lies with her, then only the man who lay with her shall die.

²⁶ But you shall do nothing to the young woman; there is in the young woman no sin deserving of death, for just as when a man rises against his neighbor and kills him, even so is this matter.

²⁷ For he found her in the countryside, and the betrothed young woman cried out, but there was no one to save her.

Rom 7:2

For the woman who has a husband is bound by the law to her husband as long as he lives. But if the husband dies, she is **released** from the law of her husband.

Jud 20:13

"Now **therefore**, deliver up **the** men, **the** perverted men who are in Gibeah, that we may put **them** to death and **remove the evil** from Israel!" But **the** children of Benjamin would not listen to **the** voice of **their** brethren, **the** children of Israel.

METHODS OF EXECUTION SHOULD BE SWIFT AND RELATIVELY PAINLESS OR CONDEMNATION WILL FALL ON THE RELEVANT AUTHORITY:

Isa 9:17

Therefore the Lord will have **no** joy in their young men, **Nor** have

mercy on their fatherless and widows; For everyone is a hypocrite and an evildoer, And every mouth speaks folly. For all this His anger is **not** turned away, But His hand is stretched out still.

Ho 4:1

Hear the word of the Lord, You children of Israel, For the Lord brings a charge against the inhabitants of the land: "There is **no** truth or **mercy** Or **knowledge** of God in the land.

Jas 2:13

For judgement is without **mercy** to the one who has shown **no mercy**. **Mercy** triumphs over judgement.

A PRISONER FACING EXECUTION SHOULD BE ENCOURAGED TO TURN TO GOD FOR DELIVERANCE, BUT HE SHOULD REMEMBER THAT GOD KNOWS EVERYTHING:

Isa 1:18

"Come now, and **let us reason** together," Says the Lord, "Though your sins are like scarlet, They shall be as white as snow; Though they are red like crimson, They shall be as wool.

Ga 6:7

Do not be deceived, God is not **mocked**; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.

Heb 10:31

It is a **fearful** thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

THE WAYS OF THE WORLD LEAD TO DEATH, INJUSTICE, POVERTY AND ALL MANNER OF PAIN BECAUSE OF THE CONSEQUENCES OF OUR SIN THAT WE HAVE HEAPED UP UPON OURSELVES AND OTHERS. ANYONE CAUGHT IN THAT WEB POTENTIALLY FACES DESTRUCTION:

1 Co 11:32

But when we are judged, we are chastened by the Lord, that we may not be **condemned** with the **world**.

Rev 18:

⁴ **And I heard another voice from heaven saying, “Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive of her plagues.**

⁵ **“For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.”**

THE CHURCH MUST ACCEPT AND ABIDE BY THE RULES OF THE GOVERNING AUTHORITY AND ALSO IMPLEMENT THE TEACHINGS GIVEN TO US BY CHRIST:

Mat 22:

¹⁷ Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?”

¹⁸ But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, “Why do you test Me, you hypocrites?

¹⁹ **Show Me the tax money.” So they brought Him a denarius.**

²⁰ And He said to them, “Whose image and inscription is this?”

²¹ They said to Him, “Caesar’s.” And He said to them, “Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.”

Mt 7:21

“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘**Lord, Lord,**’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven.

From Chapter Nine

EUTHANASIA FOR BABIES AND CHILDREN WITH A TERMINAL CONDITION:

OUR LITTLE CHILDREN DO NOT GET SICK FOR NO REASON. THEY’RE BEARING THE BRUNT OF THE CONSEQUENCES WE HAVE BROUGHT ON OURSELVES. EUTHANASIA DOESN’T CHANGE THAT, IT JUST CUTS SHORT THEIR MISERY:

Ge 34:29

and all their wealth. All their **little ones** and their wives they took captive; and they plundered even all that was in the houses.

Nu 31:9

And the children of Israel took the women of Midian captive, with their **little ones**, and took as spoil all their cattle, all their flocks, and all their goods.

Nu 31:17

Now therefore, kill every male among the **little ones**, and kill every woman who has known a man intimately.

De 2:34

We took all his cities at that time, and we utterly destroyed the men, women, and **little ones** of every city; we left none remaining.

De 20:14

But the women, the **little ones**, the livestock, and all that is in the city, all its spoil, you shall plunder for yourself; and you shall eat the enemies' plunder which the Lord your God gives you.

Ps 137:9

Happy the one who takes and dashes Your **little ones** against the rock!

Zec 13:7

"Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, Against the Man who is My Companion," Says the Lord of hosts. "Strike the Shepherd, And the sheep will be scattered; Then I will turn My hand against the **little ones**."

Mt 18:14

Even so it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these **little ones** should perish.

WE SHOW CONCERN FOR OUR CHILDREN WHEN WE FEAR, RESPECT AND REVERENCE THE WAYS OF GOD:

Ezr 8:21

Then I proclaimed a fast there at the river of Ahava, that we might humble ourselves before our God, to seek from Him the right way for us and our **little ones** and all our possessions.

THE CHURCH HAS A RESPONSIBILITY TO TELL THE TRUTH, NO MATTER HOW UNPLEASANT OR UNPOPULAR IT MAY BE.

WE HAVE TO POINT OUT WHAT'S WRONG AND THEN SHOW THEM WHAT IS NEEDED TO FIX IT:

Isa 58:1

“**Cry aloud, spare not**; Lift up your voice like a trumpet; Tell My people their transgression, And the house of Jacob their sins.

Joh 8:32

And you shall know the **truth**, and the **truth** shall make you **free**.”

Joh 8:36

Therefore if the Son makes you **free**, you shall be **free indeed**.

Mt 13:15

For the hearts of this people have grown dull. Their ears are hard of hearing, **And** their eyes they have closed, Lest they should see with their eyes **and** hear with their ears, Lest they should understand with their hearts **and turn**, So that I should **heal them**.’

THIS NEXT SELECTION OF SCRIPTURES ARE DELIBERATELY INCLUDED FOR THOSE PARENTS WITH DESPERATELY SICK AND DYING CHILDREN WHO HAVE DECIDED TO LOOK TO GOD FOR HELP TO SAVE THEIR CHILDREN. READ CAREFULLY AND THEN FOLLOW THE INSTRUCTIONS AT THE CONCLUSION OF THIS NARRATIVE:

De 24:16

Fathers shall not be put to death for their **children**, nor shall the **children** be put to death for their **fathers**; a person shall be put to death for his own sin.

2 Ki 14:6

But the **children** of the murderers he did not execute, according to what is written in the Book of the Law of Moses, in which the Lord commanded, saying, “**Fathers** shall not be put to death for their **children**, nor shall **children** be put to death for their **fathers**; but a person shall be put to death for his own sin.”

2 Ch 25:4

However he did not execute their **children**, but did as it is written in the Law in the Book of Moses, where the Lord commanded, saying, "The **fathers** shall not be put to death for their **children**, nor shall the **children** be put to death for their **fathers**; but a person shall die for his own sin."

Jer 31:29

In those days they shall say no more: 'The **fathers** have eaten sour grapes, And the **children's** teeth are set on edge.'

THE TIME WILL COME WHEN THE ACTIONS OF THE FATHERS WILL NO LONGER BE ALLOWED TO AFFECT THEIR CHILDREN. PLEASE KEEP READING:

Ezekiel 18

¹ The word of the Lord came to me again, saying,

² "What do you mean when you use this proverb concerning the land of Israel, saying: 'The fathers have eaten sour grapes, And the children's teeth are set on edge'?"

³ "As I live," says the Lord God, "you shall no longer use this proverb in Israel.

⁴ "Behold, all souls are Mine; The soul of the father As well as the soul of the son is Mine; The soul who sins shall die.

⁵ But if a man is just And does what is lawful and right;

⁶ If he has not eaten on the mountains, Nor lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, Nor defiled his neighbor's wife, Nor approached a woman during her impurity;

⁷ If he has not oppressed anyone, But has restored to the debtor his pledge; Has robbed no one by violence, But has given his bread to the hungry And covered the naked with clothing;

⁸ If he has not exacted usury Nor taken any increase, But has withdrawn his hand from iniquity And executed true judgement between man and man;

⁹ If he has walked in My statutes And kept My judgements faithfully – He is just; He shall surely live!" Says the Lord God.

¹⁰ "If he begets a son who is a robber Or a shedder of blood, Who does any of these things

¹¹ And does none of those duties, But has eaten on the mountains Or defiled his neighbor's wife;

¹² If he has oppressed the poor and needy, Robbed by violence,
Not restored the pledge, Lifted his eyes to the idols, Or committed
abomination;

¹³ If he has exacted usury Or taken increase – Shall he then live? He shall
not live! If he has done any of these abominations, He shall surely die; His
blood shall be upon him.

¹⁴ “If, however, he begets a son Who sees all the sins which his father has
done, And considers but does not do likewise;

¹⁵ Who has not eaten on the mountains, Nor lifted his eyes to the idols of
the house of Israel, Nor defiled his neighbor’s wife;

¹⁶ Has not oppressed anyone, Nor withheld a pledge, Nor robbed by
violence, But has given his bread to the hungry And covered the naked
with clothing;

¹⁷ Who has withdrawn his hand from the poor And not received usury or
increase, But has executed My judgements And walked in My statutes –
He shall not die for the iniquity of his father; He shall surely live!

¹⁸ “As for his father, Because he cruelly oppressed, Robbed his brother by
violence, And did what is not good among his people, Behold, he shall
die for his iniquity.

¹⁹ “Yet you say, ‘Why should the son not bear the guilt of the father?’
Because the son has done what is lawful and right, and has kept all My
statutes and observed them, he shall surely live.

²⁰ The soul who sins shall die. The son shall not bear the guilt of the father,
nor the father bear the guilt of the son. The righteousness of the righteous
shall be upon himself, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon
himself.

²¹ “But if a wicked man turns from all his sins which he has committed,
keeps all My statutes, and does what is lawful and right, he shall surely
live; he shall not die.

²² None of the transgressions which he has committed shall be
remembered against him; because of the righteousness which he has
done, he shall live.

²³ Do I have any pleasure at all that the wicked should die?” says the
Lord God, “and not that he should turn from his ways and live?

²⁴ “But when a righteous man turns away from his righteousness and
commits iniquity, and does according to all the abominations that the
wicked man does, shall he live? All the righteousness which he has done

shall not be remembered; because of the unfaithfulness of which he is guilty and the sin which he has committed, because of them he shall die.

²⁵ “Yet you say, ‘The way of the Lord is not fair.’ Hear now, O house of Israel, is it not My way which is fair, and your ways which are not fair?”

²⁶ When a righteous man turns away from his righteousness, commits iniquity, and dies in it, it is because of the iniquity which he has done that he dies.

²⁷ Again, when a wicked man turns away from the wickedness which he committed, and does what is lawful and right, he preserves himself alive.

²⁸ Because he considers and turns away from all the transgressions which he committed, he shall surely live; he shall not die.

²⁹ Yet the house of Israel says, ‘The way of the Lord is not fair.’ O house of Israel, is it not My ways which are fair, and your ways which are not fair?”

³⁰ “Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways,” says the Lord God. “Repent, and turn from all your transgressions, so that iniquity will not be your ruin.

³¹ Cast away from you all the transgressions which you have committed, and get yourselves a new heart and a new spirit. For why should you die, O house of Israel?”

³² For I have no pleasure in the death of one who dies,” says the Lord God. “Therefore turn and live!”

REPENTANCE, TURNING AWAY FROM YOUR SIN, ACCEPTING THE SACRIFICE OF JESUS CHRIST WHO TOOK OUR PUNISHMENT UPON HIMSELF. THIS BRINGS HEALING OF THE SPIRIT, THE MIND AND THE BODY. HE CAN HEAL US OF ALL OUR HURTS, ANGER, FRUSTRATIONS AND ADDICTIONS AS WE WALK IN OBEDIENCE TO HIS INSTRUCTION ON HOW WE SHOULD LIVE.

THE NEW COVENANT MEANS EACH AND EVERY PERSON WILL BE JUDGED ON THEIR OWN ACTIONS, IF THEY LIVE ACCORDING TO THE WAYS OF GOD, AND WILL NO LONGER HAVE TO PAY THE PRICE OF THE FOLLY OF THEIR FATHERS.

FOR THOSE WHO DON'T LIVE ACCORDING TO THE WAYS OF GOD, THEY'RE EXPOSED TO ALL MANNER OF EVIL AND CONSEQUENCE.

WHO IN THE CHURCH CAN BE TRUSTED WITH A SITUATION LIKE THIS, WHERE A YOUNG CHILD IS DYING AND THE PARENTS ARE FRANTIC:

Ps 145:19

He will fulfill the **desire** of those who fear Him; He also will hear their cry and save them.

Isa 57:14

And one shall say, "Heap it up! Heap it up! **Prepare the way**, Take the stumbling block out of **the way** of My people."

Mal 3:1

"Behold, I send My messenger, And he will **prepare the way** before Me. And **the** Lord, whom you seek, Will suddenly come to His temple, Even **the** Messenger of **the** covenant, In whom you delight. Behold, He is coming," Says **the** Lord of hosts.

Mt 3:3

For this is he who was spoken of by **the** prophet Isaiah, saying: "**The** voice of one crying in **the** wilderness: '**Prepare the way** of **the** Lord; Make His paths straight.' "

Mr 1:15

and saying, "The time is fulfilled, **and** the kingdom of God is at hand. **Repent, and believe** in the gospel."

Mt 3:8

Therefore bear **fruits** worthy of **repentance**,

Heb 13:17

Obeys those who rule over you, and be submissive, **for** they **watch** out **for** **your souls**, as those who must give account. Let them do so with joy and not with grief, **for** that would be unprofitable **for** you.

ONLY THOSE WHO ARE SERIOUS BIBLE-BELIEVING CHRISTIANS WHO LIVE THAT WAY OF LIFE THEY DON'T JUST SPEAK IT. ONLY THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN HEALING AND ARE REGULARLY USED BY GOD TO HEAL OTHERS:

1 Co 12:9

to another faith by the same Spirit, to another **gifts** of healings by the same Spirit,

1 Co 12:28

And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, after that miracles, then **gifts** of healings, helps, administrations, varieties of tongues.

GOD DOES NOT WANT ANYONE TO DIE PREMATURELY. HE WANTS US TO TURN FROM OUR SINFUL WAYS AND EMBRACE HIS PERFECT WAYS SO THAT WE AND OUR DESCENDANTS MAY LIVE:

Amos 5:

¹ Hear this word which I take up against you, a lamentation, O house of Israel:

² The virgin of Israel has fallen; She will rise no more. She lies forsaken on her land; There is no one to raise her up.

³ For thus says the Lord God: "The city that goes out by a thousand Shall have a hundred left, And that which goes out by a hundred Shall have ten left to the house of Israel."

⁴ For thus says the Lord to the house of Israel: "Seek Me and live;

LIFE IS NOT HOPELESS ANY MORE. NOT ONLY DO WE HAVE REASON TO BE HAPPY IN THIS LIFE, WE HAVE ETERNITY TO LOOK FORWARD TO:

Luk 2:

⁸ Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night.

⁹ And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid.

¹⁰ Then the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people.

¹¹ For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Savior, who is Christ the Lord.

¹² And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger."

¹³ And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying:

¹⁴ **"Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace, goodwill toward men!"**

¹⁵ So it was, when the angels had gone away from them into heaven, that

the shepherds said to one another, "Let us now go to Bethlehem and see this thing that has come to pass, which the Lord has made known to us."

WHEN A CHRISTIAN DIES, WE MAY NOT CELEBRATE BUT WE SHOULD NEVER GRIEVE BECAUSE THE SEPARATION IS STRICTLY TEMPORARY:

Mt 8:22

But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and **let the dead bury their own dead.**"

Lu 9:60

Jesus said to him, "**Let the dead bury their own dead**, but you go and preach **the kingdom of God.**"

1 Co 15:32

If, in **the** manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantage is it to me? If **the dead** do not rise, "**Let** us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die!"

LIFE IS NOT SACRED, BUT OUR LIFE PURPOSE CAN BE:

1 Pe 2:9

But you are a **chosen generation**, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;

THERE IS MORE TO THIS LIFE THAN MOST PEOPLE KNOW, EVEN AMONG THE CHRISTIANS:

Isa 55:9

"For as the heavens **are higher** than the earth, So **are My ways higher** than your **ways**, And **My** thoughts than your thoughts.

Ec 6:6

even if he lives a **thousand years** twice – but has not seen goodness. Do not all go to one place?

Re 20:5

But the rest of the dead did not live again until the **thousand years** were finished. This is the first resurrection.

From Chapter Ten

THE CHURCH IS LIVING IN THE LAST DAYS JUST BEFORE THE RETURN OF JESUS CHRIST. THIS WILL HAPPEN IN OUR GENERATION

Da 12:4

“But you, Daniel, shut up the words, **and** seal the book until the time of the end; many shall **run to and fro, and** knowledge shall increase.”

2 Tim 3

¹ But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come:

² For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

³ unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good,

⁴ traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,

⁵ having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!

⁶ For of this sort are those who creep into households and make captives of gullible women loaded down with sins, led away by various lusts,

⁷ always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

⁸ Now as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, disapproved concerning the faith;

⁹ but they will progress no further, for their folly will be manifest to all, as theirs also was.

Mat 24

¹⁴ And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come.

¹⁵ “Therefore when you see the ‘abomination of desolation,’ spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place” (whoever reads, let him understand),

- ¹⁶ then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.
- ¹⁷ Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house.
- ¹⁸ And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes.
- ¹⁹ But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days!
- ²⁰ And pray that your flight may not be in winter or on the Sabbath.
- ²¹ For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be.
- ²² And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake those days will be shortened.
- ²³ Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There!' do not believe it.
- ²⁴ For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.
- ²⁵ See, I have told you beforehand.
- ²⁶ Therefore if they say to you, 'Look, He is in the desert!' do not go out; or 'Look, He is in the inner rooms!' do not believe it.
- ²⁷ For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be.
- ²⁸ For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together.
- ²⁹ "Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.
- ³⁰ Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.
- ³¹ And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.
- ³² "Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near.
- ³³ So you also, when you see all these things, know that it is near – at the doors!
- ³⁴ Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things take place.
- ³⁵ Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

³⁶ “But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only.

³⁷ But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be.

³⁸ For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, ³⁹ and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be.

ARE WE SENDING OUT THE WRONG MESSAGE WITH THIS PREOCCUPATION ABOUT SPEAKING IN TONGUES? IF JESUS DID IT, IT WAS NEVER RECORDED. IF THE APOSTLES DID IT, IT WAS NEVER RECORDED.

IT'S A STRANGE PHENOMENON THAT SERVES NO PURPOSE IN A PUBLIC WITNESS, SO MAYBE IT WOULD BE WISE TO KEEP SUCH THINGS PRIVATE AND FOCUS ON WHAT JESUS SAID WAS THE MOST IMPORTANT THINGS:

Mr 16:17

And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new **tongues**;

Ac 2:4

And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other **tongues**, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

Ac 2:11

Cretans and Arabs – we hear them speaking in our own **tongues** the wonderful works of God.”

Ac 10:46

For they heard them speak with **tongues** and magnify God. Then Peter answered,

Ac 19:6

And when Paul had laid hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke with **tongues** and prophesied.

1 Co 12:10

to another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another discerning of spirits, to another different kinds of **tongues**, to another the interpretation of **tongues**.

1 Cor 12:28

And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, administrations, varieties of **tongues**.

1 Cor 12:30

Do all have gifts of healings? Do all speak with **tongues**? Do all interpret?

1 Cor 13:1

Though I speak with the **tongues** of men and of angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal.

THE PRAYER OF SALVATION FOR NEW BELIEVERS MUST ALWAYS BE FOLLOWED UP WITH CLEAR BIBLICAL GUIDANCE AND LEARNING TO LIVE A TOTALLY TRANSFORMED LIFE. THE ULTIMATE GOAL BEING:

2 Cor 10:

³For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh.

⁴For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds,

⁵casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, **bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ,**

JESUS CHRIST RETURNS AND TAKES AWAY HIS BRIDE, THE CHURCH. DOES EVERYONE QUALIFY? NOT IF YOU'RE SOMEONE LIKE THIS:

Am 5:18

Woe to you who **desire** the day of the Lord! For what good is the day of the Lord to you? It will be darkness, and not light.

Mat 22:

⁹Therefore go into the highways, and as many as you find, invite to the wedding.'

¹⁰So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all whom they found, both bad and good. And the wedding hall was filled with guests.

¹¹But when the king came in to see the guests, he saw a man there who did not have on a wedding garment.

¹²So he said to him, 'Friend, how did you come in here without a wedding garment?' And he was speechless.

¹³Then the king said to the servants, 'Bind him hand and foot, take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

¹⁴For many are called, but few are chosen."

SO WHAT IS THIS WEDDING GARMENT?

Rev 19:

⁷Let us be glad and rejoice and give Him glory, for the marriage of the Lamb has come, and His wife has made herself ready."

⁸And to her it was granted to be arrayed in fine linen, clean and bright, **for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.**

⁹Then he said to me, "Write: 'Blessed are those who are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb!'" And he said to me, "These are the true sayings of God."

SO WHAT ARE THESE RIGHTEOUS ACTS?

Mathew 25:

¹⁴"For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling to a far country, who called his own servants and delivered his goods to them.

¹⁵And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to each according to his own ability; and immediately he went on a journey.

¹⁶Then he who had received the five talents went and traded with them, and made another five talents.

¹⁷And likewise he who had received two gained two more also.

¹⁸But he who had received one went and dug in the ground, and hid his lord's money.

¹⁹ After a long time the lord of those servants came and settled accounts with them.

²⁰ So he who had received five talents came and brought five other talents, saying, 'Lord, you delivered to me five talents; look, I have gained five more talents besides them.'

²¹ His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.'

²² He also who had received two talents came and said, 'Lord, you delivered to me two talents; look, I have gained two more talents besides them.'

²³ His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.'

²⁴ Then he who had received the one talent came and said, 'Lord, I knew you to be a hard man, reaping where you have not sown, and gathering where you have not scattered seed.

²⁵ And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the ground. Look, there you have what is yours.'

²⁶ But his lord answered and said to him, 'You wicked and lazy servant, you knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather where I have not scattered seed.

²⁷ So you ought to have deposited my money with the bankers, and at my coming I would have received back my own with interest.

²⁸ Therefore take the talent from him, and give it to him who has ten talents.

²⁹ For to everyone who has, more will be given, and he will have abundance; but from him who does not have, even what he has will be taken away.

³⁰ And cast the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

SO WE HAVE UNPROFITABLE SERVANTS IN THE CHURCH. HOW CAN WE KNOW IF WE ARE ONE OF THOSE?

Mat 25:

¹ "Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom.

²Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

³Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them,

⁴but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

⁵But while the bridegroom was delayed, they all slumbered and slept.

⁶And at midnight a cry was heard: 'Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!'

⁷Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps.

⁸And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.'

⁹But the wise answered, saying, 'No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.'

¹⁰And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut.

¹¹Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open to us!'

¹²But he answered and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.'

¹³Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming.

THE OIL IS THE HOLY SPIRIT. THE TALENTS REPRESENT OUR ACTS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS IN OBEDIENCE TO THE INSTRUCTIONS OF OUR LORD AND THE PROMPTING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

THE TEN VIRGINS REPRESENTS ALL THE SPIRIT-BEGOTTEN CHRISTIANS IN THE WORLD. THIS MEANS THAT HALF OF OUR NUMBER WILL NOT BE READY WHEN CHRIST RETURNS, SO WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THEM:

Rev 3:

¹⁴"And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write, 'These things says the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the Beginning of the creation of God:

¹⁵I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot.

¹⁶So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.

¹⁷Because you say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing' – and do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked –

¹⁸I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in the fire, that you may be

rich; and white garments, that you may be clothed, that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see.

¹⁹ As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent.

²⁰ Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me.

²¹ To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.

²² He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches."'"

WHAT DOES GOD MEAN WHEN HE SAYS THAT LUKEWARM CHRISTIANS WILL BE VOMITED OUT? AND WHAT IS THIS GOLD THAT LUKEWARM CHRISTIANS HAVE TO BUY AND WHAT IS THIS REFINING FIRE?

Luk 17:

³³ Whoever seeks to save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life will preserve it.

³⁴ I tell you, in that night there will be two men in one bed: the one will be taken and the other will be left.

³⁵ **Two women will be grinding together: the one will be taken and the other left.**

³⁶ Two men will be in the field: the one will be taken and the other left."

³⁷ And they answered and said to Him, "Where, Lord?" So He said to them, "Wherever the body is, there the eagles will be gathered together."

WHEN JESUS RETURNS FOR HIS CHURCH, THE HALF THAT HAVE PREPARED THEMSELVES WILL GO UP INTO THE AIR TO MEET HIM. THEY WILL BE REMOVED BEFORE THE GREAT TRIBULATION STARTS.

THOSE THAT COULDN'T BE BOTHERED AND PURSUED SELFISH PURSUITS AND STILL LOVE THE WAYS OF THIS WORLD WILL BE CAUGHT OUT AND LEFT BEHIND.

THEY ARE STILL CHRISTIANS BUT NOW THEY WILL FACE MASS PERSECUTION AND ALMOST CERTAIN DEATH.

1 Cor 15:

⁵¹ Behold, I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed –

⁵² in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

⁵³ For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

⁵⁴ So when this corruptible has put on incorruption, and this mortal has put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written: “Death is swallowed up in victory.”

⁵⁵ “O Death, where is your sting? O Hades, where is your victory?”

⁵⁶ The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

⁵⁷ But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 The 4:

¹³ But I do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who have fallen asleep, lest you sorrow as others who have no hope.

¹⁴ For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who sleep in Jesus.

¹⁵ For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep.

¹⁶ For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first.

¹⁷ Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.

¹⁸ Therefore comfort one another with these words.

THE ONES LEFT BEHIND MUST CHOOSE WHETHER TO LOSE THEIR PHYSICAL LIFE AND DIE AS MARTYRS BY CONFESSING CHRIST BEFORE THE ENEMY, OR SEEK TO SAVE THEIR PHYSICAL LIFE AND LOSE ETERNAL LIFE.

WHEN IS ALL THIS DUE TO HAPPEN?

1 The 5

¹ But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I should write to you.

² For you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night.

³ For when they say, "Peace and safety!" then sudden destruction comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape.

⁴ But you, brethren, are not in darkness, so that this Day should overtake you as a thief.

⁵ You are all sons of light and sons of the day. We are not of the night nor of darkness.

⁶ Therefore let us not sleep, as others do, but let us watch and be sober.

⁷ For those who sleep, sleep at night, and those who get drunk are drunk at night.

⁸ But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation.

⁹ For God did not appoint us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ,

¹⁰ who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him.

¹¹ Therefore comfort each other and edify one another, just as you also are doing.

¹² And we urge you, brethren, to recognize those who labor among you, and are over you in the Lord and admonish you,

¹³ and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. Be at peace among yourselves.

¹⁴ Now we exhort you, brethren, warn those who are unruly, comfort the fainthearted, uphold the weak, be patient with all.

¹⁵ See that no one renders evil for evil to anyone, but always pursue what is good both for yourselves and for all.

¹⁶ Rejoice always,

¹⁷ pray without ceasing,

¹⁸ in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

¹⁹ Do not quench the Spirit.

²⁰ Do not despise prophecies.

²¹ Test all things; hold fast what is good.

²² Abstain from every form of evil.

²³ Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

EPHRAIM AND MANASSEH WERE THE TWO SONS OF JOSEPH, WHO WAS THE YOUNGEST SON OF JACOB, WHO HAD TWELVE SONS, INCLUDING JOSEPH.

THEIR DESCENDANTS, LIVING TODAY, COVER MANY NATIONS AND BILLIONS OF PEOPLE. ARE WE CHOOSING THE WISEST LEADERS FOR OUR BUSINESSES, GOVERNMENT, SOCIAL SERVICES? OR ARE WE WORSHIPPING AT THE SHRINE OF YOUTH AND BEAUTY:

Isa 3:4

“I will **give** children to be their princes, And babes shall rule **over them**.

Isa 3:12

As for My people, children are their oppressors, And **women** rule over them. O My people! Those who lead you cause you to err, And destroy the way of your paths.”

JACOB WAS ALSO CALLED ISRAEL AND THE MODERN-DAY NATIONS OF ISRAEL ARE DESCRIBED IN GENESIS 49.

EZEKIEL 39 DESCRIBES WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THE BILLIONS OF DESCENDANTS OF THE ORIGINAL ANCIENT NATION OF ISRAEL:

Rev 9:

¹⁵ So the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released to kill a **third** of mankind.

¹⁸ By these three plagues a **third** of mankind was killed – by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths.

REVELATION POINTS TO DESTRUCTION OF ONE THIRD OF THE WORLDS POP BY THIS THERMONUCLEAR WAR.

2 Pet 3:

³ knowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts,

⁴ and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation."

⁵ For this they willfully forget: that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water,

⁶ by which the world that then existed perished, being flooded with water.

⁷ But the heavens and the earth which are now preserved by the same word, are reserved for fire until the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men.

⁸ But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

⁹ The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.

¹⁰ But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up.

¹¹ Therefore, since all these things will be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness,

¹² looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat?

¹³ Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

¹⁴ Therefore, beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless;

¹⁵ and consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation – as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has written to you,

¹⁶ as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which untaught and unstable people twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures.

¹⁷ You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest

you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the error of the wicked;

¹⁸but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory both now and forever. Amen.

THE FINAL BATTLE AT ARMAGEDDON, WHEN HUMANITY FIGHTS THE RETURN OF CHRIST HAS A PREDICTABLE OUTCOME:

Jer 13:16

Give **glory to** the Lord your **God** Before He causes darkness, And before your feet stumble On the dark mountains, And while you are looking for light, He turns it **into** the shadow of death And makes it dense darkness.

Zec 14:12

And this shall be the plague with which the Lord will strike all the people who fought against Jerusalem: Their flesh shall dissolve while they stand on their feet, Their eyes shall dissolve in their sockets, And their **tongues** shall dissolve in their mouths.

DO NOT GROW WEARY IN DOING GOOD. REVIEW THE COMMANDS OF JESUS CHRIST, BE GENEROUS, COMPASSIONATE AND SPEAK THE TRUTH BOLDLY.

MAKE HIS PRIORITIES YOUR PRIORITIES AND YOU CANNOT GO WRONG.

WE LIVE IN AMAZING AND DANGEROUS TIMES. STAY ALERT. STAY WATCHFUL AND LOOK OUT FOR ONE ANOTHER.

AUTHOR PROFILE

Born in London, England on Christmas Day 1961, James Glover pursued a love of reading through his childhood that translated into a strong writing ability that won him accolades during his school years.

Raised in a traditional Christian household, James graduated from High School in 1978 when he experienced a crisis of faith: *"I'll never forget that morning sitting in a café reading my very first newspaper. They had a big feature on the war and famine in Ethiopia; an event described as Biblical in its devastation. Their suffering was horrific and when they died, based on what I had been taught at the time, they then had hell to look forward to. Something was badly wrong but I decided to ignore it all and just get on with my life."*

An opening in retail management led to rapid promotion and a successful career that belied his main interest in investigative journalism. *"Reading and watching news and current events became an obsession especially when trying to find the story behind the story. This is different from being a conspiracy theorist because I was only interested in facts, scientific proof and historical perspective."*

At age 25, during a turbulent period in his life, James rediscovered his interest in the Christian faith but only after resolving all those awkward questions that had challenged him before. *"The trick was to go back to the Bible and start from scratch. Using scientific methodology, I put every traditional teaching under forensic-type scrutiny and compared it with scripture. It came as quite a shock to find how inaccurate most of these teachings were. I had a knack for absorbing a huge amount of information on any given subject and, since nothing could be excluded from the Bible, my conclusions had to include everything, otherwise this would create contradiction which could invalidate the whole Bible."*

James pursued these studies for 15 years and compared and contrasted each new fact with real-life experience and legitimate scientific discovery. In 2005, he published his first book: **Miraculous Healing for the Church**. *"This was always going to be a controversial subject to deal with. There must be ten thousand books covering the same ground but I wanted to write a book that would be scripturally accurate and answer all the really difficult questions."*

His latest work, **Exposing the Curse**, is his first publication for the main-stream market, which will be followed by two more books. *"I never had the opportunity to do an investigative piece for a national newspaper but now I'm involved in the biggest story on the planet, uncovering the truth about all human life both before and after death. It's a story that has never been told in all its entirety until now."*

Also by this author . . .

Miraculous HEALING for the Church

What do we really know about healing?

If someone within the Church is seeking to be healed, what does the Bible say we should do?

Jesus healed the sick, gave sight to the blind and caused the lame to walk. He empowered the Church to do the same thing, but the scriptures reveal a process to accomplish this that cannot be bypassed.

Contrary to what many people think, healing is NOT a lottery. God does not favour one person over another. But He always backs up His Word to those who believe and act upon it.

For Christians in distress, this book is a gift of insight that will definitely lead to your deliverance, IF you are willing to follow scriptural principles. It is also a handbook of revelation and instruction for those who desire to be instruments of miraculous healing to others.

To learn more about this unique book,
visit our website at: www.godintercedes.com